









037

7/6







THE NEW ERA GRAMMAR  
OF MODERN IRISH

THE EDUCATIONAL COMPANY OF IRELAND

DUBLIN AND LONDON



THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY  
ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION



# THE NEW ERA GRAMMAR OF MODERN IRISH

By  
THE REV. GERALD O'NOLAN

M.A., B.D., D.LITT.

PROFESSOR OF IRISH, ST. PATRICK'S COLLEGE, MAYNOOTH

Dom is dleáct a reáct do ríomháó,  
Dom is eol a sceol do scaoileáó,  
Dom is áil a cáil do cúimneáin,  
Ó's liom is cóir a glóir do niamháó.

(Cf. Keating's Poems, 48.)

THE EDUCATIONAL COMPANY OF IRELAND  
LIMITED

DUBLIN AND CORK

1934



PRINTED BY  
THE EDUCATIONAL COMPANY  
OF IRELAND, LIMITED  
89 TALBOT STREET, DUBLIN



## BROLLÁC.

Do ḡaeḡealaib na hÉireann toirḡrim an leabhrán so, le hioncas go mberḡ sé 'na “ḡac sa ḡearnam” ḡóib i ḡcoinnib an ḡéarlačas, agus i ḡcoinnib na ḡallḡacḡa. Tá teanḡa ársa uasal aḡainn, agus cár mḡsḡe ḡúinn beit mḡrḡálac aistḡ? Tá ḡaoine ann, agus is é is ḡóic leo ḡur ruḡ ḡan raḡ an ḡramḡac—ḡur fearr i ḡraḡ, aḡeirḡ, claoirḡ leis an litirḡeacḡ! 'Seḡḡ, agus ḡan teanḡa ná litirḡeacḡ a ḡuisḡint ar aon tsḡacḡ! Tá ḡul amḡḡa uaḡḡásac ar an ḡream san. Is éacḡac an conḡnam an ḡramḡac ḡo luḡt poḡluma na teanḡan agus ḡo luḡt léiḡte na litirḡeacḡa. Ní conḡnam ḡo ḡtí í! Oireann culait uasal ḡo smaḡneam áluinn, ac is mó smaḡneam áluinn a loitḡear ḡo minic le culait ḡiobalac ḡránḡa ḡo cur uime! “Omne tulit punctum qui miscuit utile dulci!”

ḡEARÓḡO Ó nuaḡḡáin

as Muiḡ Nuaḡac ḡom

ḡ lá 'le ḡriḡoe moiu aḡainn.

1934.







# CONTENTS

*(The numbers at the beginning of the lines refer to the sections).*

	Page
Abbreviations                   ....       ....       ....       ....	xiii

## PART I.—PHONOLOGY.

Section	
I.—The modern Irish Alphabet                   ....       ....       ....	1
II.—The Simple Vowels (24)       ....       ....       ....	1
III.—The Diphthongs (17)       ....       ....       ....	1
IV.—The Consonants (60)       ....       ....       ....	1
V.—Table of Modern Irish Consonants       ....       ....	2
VI.—Examination of the Sounds       ....       ....       ....	3
Aspiration and Eclipsis, and their causes       ....       ....	5
Dynamic Aspiration and Eclipsis       ....       ....       ....	6

## PART II.—ACCIDENCE.

### Chapter I.—The Article.

1.—Declension       ....       ....       ....       ....	7
3.—Aspiration after       ....       ....       ....       ....	8
4.—Eclipsis       ,,       ....       ....       ....       ....	9
5.—The form na h-       ....       ....       ....       ....	9
7.—Survivals       ....       ....       ....       ....       ....	10

### Chapter II.—The Noun.

8.—Various Kinds of Stems       ....       ....       ....       ....	11
10-20.—First Declension       ....       ....       ....       ....	11
21-31.—Second       ,,       ....       ....       ....       ....	14
32-44.—Third       ,,       ....       ....       ....       ....	16
45-51.—Fourth       ,,       ....       ....       ....       ....	19
52-76.—Fifth       ,,       ....       ....       ....       ....	21

### Chapter III.—The Adjective.

78.—First Declension       ....       ....       ....       ....	29
79.—Second       ,,       ....       ....       ....       ....	29
80.—Third       ,,       ....       ....       ....       ....	29
81.—Fourth       ,,       ....       ....       ....       ....	30



Section	Page
82-3.—Notes	30
84.—Formation	31
85-92.—Comparison	32
93-107.—Numeral Adjectives	36
108.—Adjectives of quantity, not numerals	43
109.—Pronominal Adjectives	45

#### Chapter IV.—The Pronoun.

110.—The Personal Pronouns	47
111-115.—Prepositional Pronouns	48
116.—Notes on „ „	50
117.—G. prons. suffixed to preps.	51
118.—Suffixed -o in Verbs	51
119-120.—Demonstrative Pronouns	51
121.—Interrogative Pronouns	52
122-3.— „ Particles	52
124.—Indefinite Pronouns	53
125.—Reflexive „	54
126-7.—Relative „	54

#### Chapter V.—The Verb.

129.—Simple Verbs	58
130.—Subsidiary Forms	60
131.—Notes on Moods and Tenses	60
133-4.—Second Conjugation	62
135-152.—Compound Verbs	63
153.—The Substantive Verb	75
154.—The Copula	76
155.—Remains of Compound Verbs	77

#### Chapter VI.—Adverbs.

156-8.—Various Kinds	79
159.—Notes on the Adverbs	82

#### Chapter VII.—Conjunctions.

160-1.—Eleven different kinds	84
-------------------------------	----

#### Chapter VIII.—Prepositions.

162.—Simple and Compound. Some governing D., some A., and some either	88
--	----

#### Chapter IX.—Interjections—(163)



## PART III.—SYNTAX.

Section	Page
Chapter I.—Syntax of the Article.	
164.—Syntactical Rules	92
165.—Article in I., not in E.	95
166.—Vivid use of the Article	97
Chapter II.—Syntax of the Noun.	
167.—Uses of the Nominative	98
168.—The Projected „	98
169.—The Virtual „	98
170.—Apposition	99
171.—Absolute Construction	100
172.—Sense „	101
173.—The Genitive	102
174.—The Dative	104
175-6.—The Accusative	106
177.—The Vocative	108
178.—The Verbal Noun	108
179.—Phrase Nouns	110
180.—Noun Clauses	112
181.—Dynamic Aspiration	113
182.—Remarks on the Cases	113
183.—Number	113
Chapter III.—Syntax of the Adjective.	
184-194.—	115
Chapter IV.—Syntax of the Pronoun.	
195.—Fully declined. Sometimes abs.	121
196.—Virtual N. or A. of Extent in Space	121
197.—The Genitive forms	122
198.—The Dative „	122
199-216.—Prolepsis	122
200.—έ, ί, ιαο, εαο	123
201.—Proleptic sé	123
202.— „ san	124
203.— „ so, seo	124
204.— „ é sm	124
205.— „ sioé (sioí, sio ιαο)	125
206-11.— „ G. sg. Δ	125
212.—Proportion Sentences	127



Section	Page
213.—Proleptic $\Delta$ (G. pl.)	129
214.—The Suffixed Pronouns 1 <sup>o</sup> $\tau\epsilon$ . 2 <sup>o</sup> $\Delta\kappa\upsilon$ . 3 <sup>o</sup> $\Delta\iota\tau$ , $\iota\epsilon\iota\varsigma$ $\upsilon\mu\epsilon$ , $\acute{\varsigma}\upsilon\iota\varsigma$ , etc. 4 <sup>o</sup> $\Delta\mu\lambda\alpha\iota\upsilon$	129
216.—Further remarks on proleptic $\Delta$	132
217.—The Demonstrative Pronouns	133
218.—The Interrogative „	134
219.—Analogical $\tau\omicron$	135
220.—Exclamatory “How!”	135
221.—Indefinite Pronouns	136
222.—The Suffixed Pronouns	136
223.—The Relative Pronouns :—	
I.—Of Extent in Degree	137
II.—Direct for Oblique :—	
A.—In Temporal Clauses	137
B.—In Modal „	138
C.—In Complex Elliptical Sentences	139
D.—In a somewhat rare construction	139
III.—The Oblique Rel. $\Delta^{\text{n}}$ , $\Delta\tau^{\text{c}}$	139
IV.—Double Relative Construction	140
V.—Multiple Relative Sentences	143
VI.—Negative Relatives	143
VII.—Rel. in Compar. and Superl. Clauses	144
VIII.—Interrogative and Relative	144
IX.—The Compound Relative	144

### Chapter V.—Syntax of the Verb.

The Copula	146
224.—A Logical Copula	146
225.—Subject and Predicate	147
226-244.—Classification Sentences	147
245-260.—Identification „	151
261.—Note on Proper Names	156
262.—The proleptic pronoun in Type I	156
263.—Complex Elliptical Sentences	156
264-9.—Idioms with “ $\iota\varsigma$ ”	157
270.—The Substantive Verb	161
271.—Introductory “ $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ ”	163
272-289.—Other Verbs	164
272.—Order of words	164
273.—Number	164



# CONTENTS

xi

Section	Page
274.—Tense ....	165
275.—Mood ....	165
276.—The Indicative ....	166
277.—The Conditional ....	166
278.—The Subjunctive ....	167
279-285.—Syntax of Conditional Sentences ....	168
286.—Auxiliary $\tau\epsilon\mu$ ....	170
287.—Neutral „ ....	170
288.— $\tau\epsilon\mu\tau\epsilon\mu$ ....	171
289.— $\tau\epsilon\tau\epsilon\mu$ ....	171
290.—Impersonal Verbs ....	171
291-2.—The Autonomous Forms ....	172
293.—Special uses of the Participle ....	174

## Chapter VI.—Syntax of Adverbs.

294-5.—Notes ....	176
296-8.—Expression of the Date ....	177

## Chapter VII.—Syntax of Conjunctions.

299.— $\Delta\varsigma\upsilon\varsigma$ ; $\Delta\varsigma\upsilon\varsigma$ , $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ ; $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ . . . $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ ; $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ . . . $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ ; $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ . . . . $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ ; $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ with Condit. ; $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ =even ; $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\acute{\alpha}$ , than ....	179
--	-----

## Chapter VIII.—Syntax of Prepositions.

300.—Partitive $\tau\epsilon$ ....	182
301.—Defining $\tau\epsilon$ ....	183
302.—Partitive $\Delta\varsigma$ ....	183
303.—Prepositional Phrases ....	184
304.—Meanings and Uses of Simple Prepositions ....	184
305.—Prepositions after Nouns and Adjectives ....	189
306.—Prepositions after Verbs ....	191
307.—Various ....	197

## Chapter IX.—Syntax of the Sentence.

308.—Ellipsis and Change of Construction ....	198
309.—Contamination, etc. ....	199
310-312.—Special Problems ....	199
313.—Repetition of Words ....	202
314.—Order of Words ....	203
315.—Simile and Metaphor ....	204
316.—Hendiadys, and Alliterative Doublets ....	205



Section	Page
317.—Illogical Elements in Construction	205
318.—Chiastic Construction	206
319.—Progressive Forms	206
320.—I. objective rather than subjective	206
321.—I. concrete        „        „        abstract	206
322.—Difference of Colouring	207

#### PART IV.—PROSODY.

323.—The Metres	208
324.—Syllabic Metres (Όάν Όίρεαό)	208
A.—Όειβίρε.—Rules. Classification of Consonants. Ex.	208
B.—Rannaίγεαότ mór	210
C.—Rannaίγεαότ mór ζαίρη	211
D.—        „        βεας	211
E.—        „        „        „	211
F.—Séavnaó (Séavnaó)	212
G.—Όεαόναό βεας	212
H.—        „        mór	213
I.—Cas-báirne	213
J.—Rionnaίρη	213
325.—Accentual Metres	214
A.—Λαοί (Λαοίό)	214
B.—Rosc	215
C.—Caoineáó (Tuireamh ; marbna)	215
D.—Aímrán	216

#### Appendix.—WORD FORMATION.

326-337.—A.—Verbal Nouns	221
338.—        B.—Other Nouns	224
338.—        I.—Combination of Adjective and Noun	224
339.—        II.—Combination of Noun and Noun	224
340.—        III.—Combination of Indeclinable Particle with Noun	224
341-362.—IV.—By means of Prepositional Prefixes	225
363.—V.—By means of Suffixes.    A.—From Adjectives	231
364.—        B.—From Nouns	233
365.—        C.—From Adverbs, Prepositions, Pronouns	236
366.—        D.—From Verbs	236
367.—Formation of Adjectives	237
368.—Formation of Verbs	237



## ABBREVIATIONS.

- A.—Accusative.  
 Δes.—Δesop Δ τάμης 50  
 ηέιρην.  
 ΔΟΟ.—Poems of Δongus Ó  
 Dálaigh.  
 ΔΟΡ.—Δοῦδῶν Ó Rathaile.  
 ΔR.—Deada Δοῦδ Ruaró.  
 BK.—Bergin's Keating.  
 bn.—Bible Stories  
 (O'Leary).  
 BR.—BRICRIU.  
 CCU.—Céad de Ceoltaib  
 Ulaó.  
 CD.—An Craos Deamán.  
 CMO.—Críost Mac Dé.  
 Conn.—Connacht.  
 CS.—na Ceitre Soisgél  
 (O'Leary).  
 D.—Dative.  
 OB.—Keating's "Dion-  
 brollac."  
 OO.—Oán Dé (M'Kenna).  
 Dott.—Dottin, Manuel  
 d'Irlandais Moyen.  
 E.—English.  
 Eis.—Eisirt (O'Leary).  
 ES.—Eochar-sciat an  
 Aiprinn.  
 F.—Feminine.  
 FC.—File an Comarais.  
 FF.—Keating's Forus Feasa  
 FO.—Calendar of Oengus.  
 FSA.—Finn scéalta na  
 h-Araibe.  
 G.—Genitive.  
 S.—Suairé.  
 Gr.—Greek.  
 HAIc.—Poems of pádraigh  
 Haicéad.  
 Im.—Imitation of Christ.  
 K.—Keating.  
 KH.—Keating's History.  
 KP.—Keating's Poems.  
 KTB.—Trí bitor-ḡaoite an  
 báis.  
 L.—Latin.  
 LMC.—Luḡaró Mac Con  
 (O'Leary).  
 LO.—Laoi Oisín ar Tír na  
 n-Óg.  
 LúC.—Lúcián (O'Leary).  
 M.—Munster ; masculine.  
 mac.—Sgéalardeacht na  
 Macabéad.  
 msp.—mo Sgeal fém.  
 N.—Nominative ; niam.  
 Neut.—Neuter.  
 nnS.—naoi nḡabáó an  
 ḡiolla Duib.  
 P.—Predicate.  
 PF.—Poems of Pearse  
 Ferriter.  
 PH.—Passions & Homilies  
 (Leabhar Breac).  
 PIM.—Primer of Irish  
 Metrics.  
 Pl.—Plural.  
 pol.—P. O'Leary.  
 S.—Subject ; singular ;  
 Séadna.  
 Ser.—Seanmóin 7 trí pícro  
 (O'L.).  
 Sg.—Sḡot-bualadó  
 (O'Leary).



Smb.—Seacht mBuaird an Éirge Amac.

TBB.—Trí Dúor-ḡaoite an Báis (Keating).

TBC.—Tam Bó Cuaitnge (O'L.).

Thurn.—Professor Thurneysen.

U.—Ulster. UP.—Ulster Proverb.

V.—Vocative. ZCP.—Zeitschrift für Celtische Philologie.

The sign “ $\gamma$ ”=L. *et*, I.  $\Delta$ gus. <=reduced from.  
 >=reduced to.



# GRAMMAR OF MODERN IRISH

## PART I.

### PHONOLOGY.

I.—The mod. I. alphabet has 18 letters :— $\Delta$ , e,  $\iota$ , o, u (vowels) ; b, c, d, f, g, h, l, m, n, p, r, s, t (consonants). These 18 symbols have to represent 101 sounds. These sounds are :—

A.—Simple Vowels (24) :—1°  $\Delta$ , o, u, e,  $\iota$  (short— $\Delta$ , o, u being broad, e,  $\iota$  being slender) ; the obscure vowel is represented by  $\epsilon$  ; a, slightly different from  $\Delta$ . 2°  $\acute{\Delta}$ ,  $\acute{o}$ ,  $\acute{u}$ ,  $\acute{e}$ ,  $\acute{\iota}$  ;  $\acute{a}$  (long variety of last a in 1°). 3°  $\Delta$ , o, u, e,  $\iota$  ; a—all nasal. 4° The modified vowels :— $\acute{a}$ , a (slender) ;  $\grave{a}$  (broad e) ; y (broad  $\iota$ ). 5° Ulster  $\Delta o = \acute{u}$ , with unrounded lips.

II.—Exx. of the Simple Vowels :—1° Captaen, sop, bun, eite, sin. The 2nd syllable of capall has the obscure vowel ; the 1st syllable, has “a.” 2°  $\tau\acute{a}$ , bó, cú,  $\tau\acute{e}$ ,  $\tau\acute{i}$  ;  $\acute{\Delta}lumn$  (W’fd.). 3°  $\acute{l}ám$ , cómgar, cumr $\acute{e}\Delta$ , séim, nime ;  $\tau\acute{a}$  (W’fd.). 4°  $\Delta$   $\acute{S}eám$ , ciseám, etc. :  $\Delta$   $\Delta\acute{c}air$ ,  $\acute{S}eaitire$  ; caol, daol ; buíde,  $\acute{S}uirde$ . 5°  $\Delta o\grave{o}$ .

III.—B.—Diphthongs (17) :—(a) Slurred :—1°  $\Delta u$  (nasal)— $\acute{S}amrad\grave{o}$ . 2° au—ann,  $\acute{o}all$  (M.). 3° ou (nasal)— $\acute{D}omnac$  (M.). 4° ou—poll,  $\acute{S}ab\Delta$  (M.). 5° ay (nasal)— $\acute{\Delta}imleas$ . 6° ay—camnt,  $\acute{r}\acute{a}\acute{o}arc$ . 7° oy— $\acute{o}oiminn$ . 8° ey— $\acute{r}\acute{e}\acute{o}ma$ ,  $\acute{S}eibead\grave{o}$ . 9° ei— $\acute{C}iblin$ . (b) Unslurred :—1° ua—cuan, buan. 2° ue—cuam, buam. 3° ia— $\acute{r}ial$ ,  $\acute{c}iall$ . 4° ie— $\acute{D}riam$ ,  $\acute{r}iam$ . 5° ià— $\acute{S}\acute{e}al$ ,  $\acute{b}eal$  (Parts of M.). 6° ya— $\acute{r}ia\acute{S}al\acute{e}\Delta$ . 7° ye— $\acute{r}ia\acute{S}ail$  (not preceded by art.). 8° ia— $\acute{r}ia\acute{o}am$  (2nd element, slender  $\Delta$  short).

IV.—C.—The Consonants (60) :—The Consonants are divided according to :—(a) Point of articulation, into :—1. Labials. 2. Upper Dentals. 3. Lower Dentals. 4. Hard Palatals. 5. Soft Palatals. 6. Chordal—the consonant “n,” of which there are three varieties. (b) Mode of articulation, into :—1° Stop consonants. 2° Continuants. (c) Quality, into :—1. Broad, slender. 2. Nasal, non-nasal. 3. Long, short. 4. Breath, voice.



V.—Table of Modern Irish Consonants.

BROAD				SLENDER			
NON-NASAL		NASAL		NON-NASAL		NASAL	
Breath	Voice	Breath	Voice	Breath	Voice	Breath	Voice
I. Labials:— Stop Continuants—p, p̣, hW	b V, W, VW	hm m̃c (f̃)	m ŵ, ŵ̃, vŵ	p p̣ (p̣)	b v (b̃, m̃)	hm m̃c	m ŵ̃ (m̃)
II. Upper Dentals:— Stops—t Cont.—h l	t { l { Contact between tongue and teeth	hn tip of teeth	n	t (Down-turned tip. Contact with blade of tongue) hr hl	ð r l { Approach of tongue to teeth { Contact of blade of tongue with teeth	hn hñ hñ	n ñ ñ
III. Lower Dentals:— Continuants— S, Sh	Z, Zh	—	—	s, sh	z, zh	—	—
IV. Hard Palatals:— Stops— Continuants—	— —	— —	— —	c c̣ (ṣ)	ɟ ɟ̃ (ʝ̃)	hnɟ —	nɟ —
V. Soft Palatals— Stops—c Cont.—c̣	ɟ ɟ̃ (ʝ̃)	hnɟ —	nɟ —	— —	— —	— —	— —
VI. Chordals— h (č, š, ř)	—	h (č̃, š̃, ř̃) huim̃c !	—	h (č̃, š̃, ř̃) č̃ip̃ñ, č̃uim̃, š̃im̃	—	—	—



VI.—1° A vowel, diphthong or consonant is nasal, when the voice (or breath) used in its formation issues not only through the lips, but through the nasal cavity as well :— $\lambda\acute{\alpha}\mu$  ( $\Delta$ ),  $\Theta\omicron\mu\acute{\nu}\alpha\varsigma$  ( $\omicron\upsilon$ ),  $\zeta\eta\acute{o}\tau\alpha$  ( $\eta$ ).

2° A diphthong is broad or slender, or both, according to the nature of the component vowels. E.g., 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 (IIIa), 1, 6 (IIIb) are broad. 9 (IIIa), 4, 8 (IIIb) are slender ; 2, 7 (IIIb) are broad-slender ; 8 (IIIa), 3, 5 (IIIb) are slender-broad.

3° A breath-sound is one in the production of which the vocal chords are not vibrating. Most vowels are voiced, but the final vowel of the Holy Name,  $\acute{\iota}\omicron\varsigma\alpha$ , is often unvoiced. Every breath consonant contains a breath vowel, rendered consonantal by the explosion or the audible friction accompanying its production.

4° A stop consonant is one for the production of which the column of breath (or voice) must be stopped momentarily at a certain point. The opening is followed by a puff of air (voiced or unvoiced). Hence these consonants are sometimes called Plosives, or Explosives.

5° A continuant consonant is one in the production of which there is no such stoppage, but only an approach of certain parts of the vocal organs, sufficient to cause audible friction. When the friction is absent we get a vowel. Hence the difference between vowel and consonant is one of degree. Vowels may easily become (or develop) consonants :—E.g., the  $u$  in  $u\lambda\acute{\alpha}\mu$  is often “ $w$ ” ; the  $\upsilon$  in  $\eta\acute{\iota}\ \upsilon\phi\upsilon\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon$  is a consonantal glide between  $i$  and  $\acute{u}$ . So consonants may become vowels, or, in combination with vowels, develop diphthongs.— $u\zeta\alpha\omicron$  becomes  $\acute{u}$  ;  $\rho\omicron\tau\tau$ ,  $\kappa\alpha\omicron\alpha\tau\epsilon$ , develop diphthongs.

6° A stop consonant is momentary, and cannot be continued at will. The nasal hum which, in the case of  $m$ ,  $n$ ,  $\eta\varsigma$ , can be continued at will, is not a consonant at all, but the constituent vowel of the consonant. Cf. this vocalic hum with the frictional noise (consonantal) of, say, the English “ $th$ ” in “*though*.” This frictional noise, can of course be continued as long as the breath lasts.



7° *m*, *n*, *ng* are not usually classified as stops. But as a complete oral stoppage is essential, we see no valid reason for excluding them from this category. *l* and *r*, are continuants, because, although an oral stoppage is required (see 8°) it is not complete, and the continuant element is consonantal, not (as in the case of *m*, *n*, *ng*) vocalic.

8° *l* and *r* are neither complete stops nor complete continuants. For “*l*” there is a stoppage at the front teeth, with an opening at the sides of the tongue; for “*r*” there is a stoppage at the sides of the tongue, the opening being in front, between the tip (broad *r*) or the blade (slender *r*) of the tongue, and the roots or ivory of the upper teeth. “*l*,” is a lateral trill, “*r*” a frontal trill. The trill is more marked in “*r*” than in “*l*,” and more marked in broad “*r*” than in slender “*r*.”

9° For all broad sounds the main body of the tongue is kept low in the mouth, and high for slender sounds.

10° The consonant “*nW*” (=wh in Eng. “what”) occurs in—*bΔ mΔit uΔit é vÉanam*.

11° The consonant “*n*” :—(a) Unvoices a voiced consonant :—*liomtΔ=liofΔ*, *ΔmtΔc=ΔftΔc*. (b) Gives up its natural quality (in M.) :—*ní cūigim* (*n*- slender) : *broiceao* (*n*- broad) : *mΔit*, *cΔit* (*n*- broad). (c) In the 2nd syll. -*Δc* regularly attracts the accent (in M.). Not, however, if “*n*” intervenes :—*ceatΔc*, *bacΔc* : But—*ceatΔc*, *vleΔgtΔc*, etc.

12° Aspiration :—A single consonant between two vowels was aspirated :—(a) Initially :—*ceann an fírmóir* : *an tsúil glas*. (b) Medially :—*leabhar*, *rógnam* (<*po-gníom*). (c) Final :—*cat*, *clúm*, *gnát*, etc.

13° Dynamic Aspiration :—(a) *san cos*—legless ; *san cos*—without one particular leg. (b) *an céao sgéal*—the 1st story (Asp. irregular. Perhaps to distinguish from—*an céao sgéal*—the 100 stories). (c) *Bean Seáin*—S.’s wife (Regular, as *bean* orig. ended in a vowel). *mac Seáin* (Irregular).



14° *n-* is used (where phonetically unjustified) :—*do h-órrouigeadó, do h-innseadó* : but—*o'órrouig sé, o'mnis sé*.

15° Loss of Aspiration:—*crot*: *cruť*; the init. const. of Auton. vbs. often resists asp.—*Ní mar a braiítear a bítear*—Things are not what they seem.

16° Eclipsis :—(a) Initial :—*óá* *oťrian*—two thirds (*ťrian* orig. neut.) ; *Sliaó ġCua* (*sliaó*, neut. *s-* stem, but eclipses on anal. of neut. *o-* and *n-* stems ; *Óál ġCais* (*óál* orig. neuter). The final nasal which causes initial eclipsis appears as :—1. *n-* before a vowel—*ceol na n-éan*. 2. *m-* before *b*—*ar an mbóro*. 3. *b-* before *p*—*ar an bport*. 4. *ġ* before *f*—*ar an ġrumneois*. 5. *n-* before *o*—*óúnaó na n'óóirse*. 6. *o-* before *ť*—*ar an oťalam*. 7. *ġ-* before *c*—*torad na ġcrann*. 8. *n* (= *nġ*) before *ġ*—*Clann na nġaeóeal*. Sometimes initial *s*, *sh* are eclipsed giving *z*, *zh* :—*le saóġal na saóġal* (= *zaol*) ; *ťis na saġart* (= *zaġart*) ; *an suťóťá ? an sínťá ?* Eclipsis, therefore, practically means the voicing of a breath consonant, or the nasalizing of a voiced one.

(b) Medial :—*Coġad, coġar, coġuas* (in these only the resultant sound is written). In *coiscrióc, éaġcóir, éavťrom*, and many others, the eclipsed consonant also appears. Sometimes eclipsing *n-* and the resultant sound are both written :—*combľioćť, naonbár, veicńiuťar* (in the last two *-b-* is the eclipsed *f-* of *ťear*). In some borrowed words *ġ, o*, appear medially for *ć, ċ* :—*Cuĩġean* (L. *coquina*), *saġart* (L. *sacerdos*), *noťlaĩġ* (L. *Natalicia*), *eaġlaĩs* (Ecclesia), *seāġal* (*secale*). In *saóġal* (L. *saeculum*), *-ġ-* because of assonance, in poetry, with *baóġal*. *no*, med. and final > *nn* :—*beannaćť* (O.I. *berdacht*), *aiťreann*, etc.

(c) Final Eclipsis :—*Céav* (< *cent-*), 100 ; *céav* (< *cintu-*), first ; *veáav* (< *dent-*) ; *ťormaav* (< *forment-*), envy ; *brĩġro, cúĩġ, veāġ*, etc. Sometimes final *t* > *o* :—*aićro*, disease (< L. *accidit*) ; *ceav*, permission (< L. *li-cet*) ; *ĩno*, Shrovetide (< L. *initium*) ; *ťríonóro* (< L. *Trinitatem*). When an eclipsing word ends *now* with the sound “ *n*,” the latter unvoices



the following initial (already voiced by eclipsis), so that the eclipsis is nullified :—*deic cinn, seacht tíoblaicte an Spioraid Naomh* (seacht here follows *deic*). In :—*deic mblíana*, “*ml*” is unvoiced.

(d) Dynamic Eclipsis :—Eclipsis, like Aspiration, is sometimes contrary to phonetic law, and the sg. n. is then used dynamically (as in *trí capall*, on the analogy of *trí céad*) :—

*Trí céada ba dhinn, trí créachta sa tír,  
Trí naom-leimh naomta tug gear-searc do Chríost ;  
A trí mbéal, a trí scroíde, a trí saor-corp fáilís,  
A trí n-éadan ba gléiseal as daolaib is díe*

(A. Ó'R. 46)—

Three melodious strings, three glens in the earth,  
Three sainted, holy children who fondly loved Christ,  
Their three mouths, their three hearts, their three noble  
bodies beneath a stone, Their three fair, bright foreheads  
the prey of chafers—it is ruin !



## PART II.

### CHAPTER I.

#### THE ARTICLE (1—7).

1.—There is no indefinite article in Irish. The definite article is declined thus :—

M.	Singular.	F.	
N.A. before vowel	}	N.A.D. (before vowels)	} an'
G. „ s-		and consonants other than s-	
		N.A. (before s-)	an t-
All other cases :—	an	G. (before consonants)	na
		( „ vowels)	na h-

#### Plural.

N.A.D. (before consonants) :	na
( „ vowels) :	na h-
G. (before consonants) :	na <sup>n</sup>
( „ vowels) :	na n-

#### Dual.

M. and F. (in all cases) :—an.

Examples :—M. sg.—An fear so, this man ; do'n fear so, to this man ; ar an bfeair so, on this man ; an t- $\Delta$ tair p.  $\acute{O}$  Lao $\acute{o}$ gaire, Fr. P. O'Leary ; an t-arán so na beata $\acute{o}$ , this Bread of Life ; ceann an fíir seo, this man's head ; leabhair an  $\Delta$ tair p.  $\acute{O}$  Lao $\acute{o}$ gaire, Fr. P. O'Leary's books ; síle an tsolais, (the) brightness of the light.



F. sg.—*Ṭá an óróóg san briste*, that thumb is broken ; *Ṭá an bean so breoite*, this woman is sick ; *an tsúil deas atá tinn* (it is) the right eye that is sore ; *Ṭá fear na mná san ar buite*, that woman's husband is mad ; *bárr na h-óróóige* (the) top of the thumb.

Pl. M. and F.—*Na fir seo*, these men ; *na h-óróóga san*, those thumbs ; *Cumann na mBan*, the women's Association ; *ceol na n-éan*, the music of the birds,

Dual.—*An dá shagart úr*, those two priests (taken separately) ; *an dá aspal déag*, the twelve Apostles ; *an dá bróig seo*, these two shoes.

2.—The article was originally an adjective formed from the two demonstratives, *sin* (*san*) and *to* (*ta*). (Cf. Lat. *is-tum*, *is-tam*). *To-* and *ta-* being, in the article, pretonic, appeared at first as *ro-*, *ra-*. After prepositions which originally ended in a consonant, the initial *s-* of the article appears, but is usually written with the preposition. E.g.—*As an*, *as na* ; *ins an*, *ins na* ; *leis an*, *leis na* ; *tar san áit*, over the ford (but frequently lost here—nearly always in the Pl.—*tar na beartaib*). Also this *s-* appears after *ro* and *re* (with the Pl.), *go*, *to* (in certain phrases), *ó* (in Pl.) and *tré*. Thus :—*ro sna raome sin*, to those persons ; *gus an lá mui*, until to-day. Especially in such phrases as :—*seachtmáin is lá mui*, this day week ; *trés an mbí sí sa t-am*, through life everlasting. Instead of *trés an*, Munster Irish uses *trí an* ; but *tré sna* in the Pl.

3.—The article *aspirates* :—

(a) N.A. sg. F.—This is phonetically irregular in the A., which follows the N. in modern Irish. *o* and *t* resist this aspiration in both cases. E.g.—*an dúil sin*, that desire ; *an t-oil*, Will ; *an tuiscint*, Intelligence.

(b) D. sg. of all genders—but not always. Many irregularities arise from the widespread confusion of D. and A., after prepositions which originally governed both cases. *Ar an bóro*, on the table (properly D., but used in U. for A. as well). *Ar an mbóro* (properly A., but used in M. for D. as well). Thus, *ta sé ar an bóro* (*rest*) would



be right according to the old distinction ; but *oo éait sé anuas ar an mbóro é* (*motion*).

(c) G. sg. M.—*níl leigéas le faḡáil ac leigéas an báis*, the only remedy is that of death. *o* and *τ* resist aspiration. *ṭigearna an ṭailm*, the landlord ; *beata an oume*, Man's life.

(d) The form *an τ-* is always due to an aspirated *s* :—

1°. In *an τ-atair*, *an τ-úrlár*, *an τ-arán*, the father, the floor, the bread (N. sg. M.), the *τ-* is due to the aspiration of the final *-s* of *the article* itself ; *s=h*, which, acting on the *-o-* of the article, changed it into *τ-* (\**sindos athir*). In mod. I. the A. follows the N.

2°. In *an tsagairt*, of the priest (G. sg. M.), and *an tsúil*, the eye (N. sg. F.) *τ-* comes from *o-* of the article under the influence of the aspirated *s-* of *the noun*. (\**Sindi shagairt*; \**sinda shúlis*). The *s* in these cases is aspirated, though undotted. It is better not to say that the article *prefixes τ-* to the noun. The *τ-* is an integral part of the article itself.

#### 4.—The article *eclipses* :—

(a) G. Pl.—*Ceol na n-éan* (*n-* before vowels), the birds' music ; *cur na bpeár le céile*, uniting the men.

(b) Eclipsis in the sg. after prepositions which originally governed an A. still remains to some extent, but has been disturbed considerably. (See 3 (b) above).

#### 5.—The article, before vowels, appears as *na n-*

(a) In G. sg. F.—*1 tár na n-oróce*, in the middle of the night. The *n-* is due to the aspiration of final *-s* of the article, which, in G. sg. F. was \**sindas* (*..innah-*, *na n-*).

(b) In N.A.D. pl.—(Irregular in M., *na n-éisg*, the fishes=O.I. ind *éisg*. Irregular also in D. pl.—*oo sna n-éminib*, to the little birds).

6.—The only extant use of the neuter sg. article is what is now called the compound relative. E.g., *a*



n-óruigeann sé dúinn, the (thing which) he orders us (all that he orders us).

7.—Two other notable survivals of special forms of the article are :—

(a) An té, he who, they who (..O.I. int-í, N.sg. M. of the article, with the deictic particle -í, seen in Gk. houtos-í; Lat. qui..quo-i).

(b) The noun níl, thing, developed partly from O.I. an-í (Neut. of int-í), that which, the thing which ; and partly from ní, the Neut. of O.I. nech=anyone.

The word té is now an indeclinable noun, and can be used either of an individual or of a class ; as also of either gender.

“ An té bíonn síos buailtear cos air,  
An té bíonn suas óltair deoic air.” (Proverb).

(They who are down are trodden under foot, they who are successful are toasted.)



## CHAPTER II.

### THE NOUN (8—76).

8.—For the purposes of Declension, Nouns are divided according to the ending of the stem, which may either be vocalic or consonantal. Hence we arrive at the following scheme, which, however, has been much disturbed, owing to the confusion of different types :—

First Decl.	Second Decl.	Third Decl.	Fourth Decl.	Fifth Decl.
O- stems.	Δ- stems	1 and 11- stems.	10- and 1Δ- stems.	Consonan- tal stems.

9.—There were three genders in O.I., but the Neuter has to a great extent fallen into disuse. Nouns are now generally reckoned as M. or F.

### FIRST DECLENSION.

10.—All the nouns of this declension are now M., and all end, in N. sg., in a broad consonant, except ʒΔ, spear (11), and ʋ1Δ, God (15).

11.—The Voc. sg., and pl., is preceded by the particle Δ. There are five cases—Nom., Gen., Dat., Acc., Voc. In modern Irish the Acc., in most instances, has the same form as the Nom. Examples :—

ʃear, a man. Sg.—D.A.N.—ʃear. V.G. ʃ1r.

Ceann, head. „ „ ceann. „ c1nn. (D. often c1onn).

Scéat, story (originally Neut.)—D.A.N.—scéat. V.G. scéit—So :—éan, bird ; néat, cloud ; ʃear, grass.  
Genitive—ém, néit, ʃéir.



**folc**, hair.—Sg. D.A.N. folc. V.G. fuilc. So :—  
cnoc, hill ; son, sound ; poll, hole ; tor, bush.  
V.G. cnuic, sun, puill, tuir.

**iasc**, fish. Sg. D.A.N.—iasc. V.G. éisc. But rian,  
track (G. riam) ; srian, bridle (G. sriam) ; brian,  
Brian (G. briam) ; biað, food (G. bið) ; diaðal,  
devil (G. diaðail).

**leastar**, cask, helpless person.—Sg.—D.A.N. leastar.  
V.G. leastair. So :—claróeam, sword ; solas,  
light ; sólás, consolation ; ainígeal, angel ; bótar,  
road. V.G.—claróim, solais, sóláis, ainíil, bótar.

Nouns ending in -ac, -eac have -aig, -ig in V.G. Thus:—

**uatac**, burden. Sg. D.A.N.—uatac. V.G. uataig.  
So :—aonac, fair ; mullac, summit ; beatac, path ;  
éadaac, cloth ; órlac, inch. V.G.—aonaiig, mullaig,  
beataig, éadaig, órlaig.

**sa**, spear, dart, sting, beam, belongs to this declen-  
sion. G. sa, sae, saoi. N.A. pl. saoi, saete, saoiite.  
G. pl. sat, saete. D. pl. saoiib, saetiib.

**coileac**, cock.—Sg. D.A.N. coileac. V.G. coiliig.  
So :—mairtíneac, cripple. V.G. mairtíniig.

**mac**, son. Sg. D.A.N.—mac, V.G. mic (O.I. maic ;  
mid. I. meic).

**leanb**, child. Sg. D.A.N.—leanb, V.G. leimb.

### Plural.

12.—	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
<b>féar</b> .—	fíar	féar	féaraib	a féara
<b>Ceann</b>	cinn	ceann	ceannaib	a céanna
<b>Scéal</b>	scéala	scéal	scéalaib	a scéala
<b>folc</b> .—	fuilc	folc	folcaib	a folca
<b>iasc</b> .—	éisc	iasc	iascaib	a iasca
<b>leastar</b> .—	leastair	leastar	leastraiib	a leastra
<b>Claróeam</b> .—	claróimte	claróeam	claróimtiib	a claróimte
<b>Solas</b> .—	soillse	soillse	soillsiib	a soillse
<b>Sólás</b> .—	sóláis	sólás	sólásaib	a sólása
<b>Ainígeal</b> .—	ainíle	ainígeal	ainíliib	a ainíle
<b>bótar</b> .—	bóitre	bótar	bóitriib	(a bóitre)



	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
uAlAc.—	uAlAige	uAlAc	uAlAigib	a uAlAige
donAc.—	donAige	donAc	donAigib	(a donAige)
beAlAc.—	beAlAige	beAlAc	beAlAigib	(a beAlAige)
éAdAc.—	éAdAige	éAdAc	éAdAigib	(a éAdAige)
órlAc.—	órlAige	órlAc	órlAigib	(a órlAige)
CoileAc.—	coilig	coileAc	coileAcAib	a coileAcA
mac.—	mic	mac	macAib	a macA
leanb.—	leanbái	leanb	leanbAib	a leanbái

13.—Note.—Scéala, news ; scéalta, stories ; clárómte, soillse, aingle, bóitre ; uAlAige, donAige, beAlAige, éAdAige, órlAige ; mic, leanbái.

14.—uAlAc, donAc, beAlAc, éAdAc, órlAc form their pl. in -Aige under the influence of teAc, a Neut. s- stem. O.I. pl. tige. Forms enclosed within brackets (12) occur only rarely.

15.—N.B.—Óia, God, belongs to this declension. (Lat.—deus, divus). G. sg.—Óé. V.—a Óia. Pl.—Óéite.

16.—Many nouns which originally belonged to this declension have passed into others :—Scát, shadow ; urcóro, harm ; aois, age ; trian, a third ; seor, seoro, jewel. G. now—scátA (3rd), urcóroe (2nd), aoise (2nd), trianA (3rd), seoro (1st), seoro (2nd), seorA (3rd). Deamán, demon, has N.A. pl. deamna (O.I. demn(a)e) owing to Lat. daemonia (*Thurn.*). But deamain also occurs in mod. I.

17.—The Dual :—Used after dá, two. It is (with rare exceptions) the same in form as the D. sg., and does not change for case. E.g., dá fear, two men. Dá aspirates.—Dá ceann, iasc, leashtar, clárdeam, solas, bótar, 7rl. The G. pl. is sometimes used as G. Dual :—lán do dá súl, the full of your two eyes (Súl is 2nd and 3rd declension).

18.—Many nouns in -Aó, owing to the loss (in speech) of the final -ó, pass into the 4th declension in the pl. Thus :—ionghA(ó), wonder ; maora(ó), dog ; slabra(ó),



chain ; *maṛṣa(ó)*, bargain, market. Pl.—*ionṣnaí*, *maṵraí*, *slaḃraí*, *maṛṣaí*. Note the pl.—*ṵóirṣe* (*ṵoras*, door), *éiṣṣe* (*éiṣṣas*, learned man).

19.—Plurals in *-a* :—*Caor*, berry ; *ṵeor*, tear ; *ṵocal*, word ; *ṵiaḥ*, debt ; *bruac*, brink ; *scéal*, story ; *meacan*, parsnip ; *peann*, pen ; *seor*, jewel ; *slán*, surety. Pl.—*caora*, *ṵeora*, *ṵocla* (also *ṵocal*), *ṵiaḥa*, *bruacha*, *scéala* (news), *meacna*, *peanna* (also *pinn*), *seora* (see 16), *slána*.

20.—Plurals in *-ta*, *-ḫa* :—*Ceol*, music ; *ṵán*, poem ; *ṵún*, fort ; *néal*, cloud ; *seol*, sail ; *coṣaḥ*, war ; *cuan*, harbour ; *céaḥ*, hundred ; *scéal*, story ; *líon*, net. Pl. *ceolta*, *ṵánta*, *ṵúnta*, *néalta*, *seolta*, *coṣta*, *cuanḫa*, *céaḫta* (but *céaḥ* after numerals :—*trí céaḥ*, *seacht ṣcáaḥ*, 300, 700), *scéalta* (but *scéala*=news), *líonta*. *Coṣaḥ* comes from *caḥ*, battle (*u-* stem) with the prep. con- prefixed.

## SECOND DECLENSION.

21.—All nouns of this declension end, in N. sg., in a broad or slender consonant. All are F.—

		V.A.N.	G.	D.
<b>Cos</b> ,	foot.—	<i>cos</i>	<i>coise</i>	<i>cois</i>
<b>Ṫróṣ</b> ,	shoe.—	<i>bróṣ</i>	<i>bróise</i>	<i>bróis</i>
<b>long</b> ,	ship	<i>long</i>	<i>luinge</i>	<i>luinṣ</i>
<b>Clann</b> ,	children.—	<i>clann</i>	<i>clainne</i>	<i>clainn</i>
<b>Ṣrian</b> ,	sun.—	<i>ṣrian</i>	<i>ṣréine</i>	<i>ṣréin</i>
<b>Ṗian</b> ,	pain.—	<i>pian</i>	<i>péine</i>	<i>péin</i>
<b>Scian</b> ,	knife.—	<i>scian</i>	<i>scine</i>	<i>scin</i> ( <i>sciam</i> )
<b>Ciall</b> ,	sense.—	<i>ciall</i>	<i>céille</i>	<i>céill</i>
<b>Ṣéaṣ</b> ,	branch.—	<i>ṣéaṣ</i>	<i>ṣéise</i>	<i>ṣéis</i>
<b>Ṗréam</b> ,	root	<i>Ṗréam</i>	<i>Ṗréime</i>	<i>Ṗréim</i>
<b>Spéar</b> ,	sky.—	<i>spéar</i>	<i>spéire</i>	<i>spéir</i> .

22.—

<b>lil</b> ,	lily.—	<i>lil</i>	<i>lile</i>	<i>lil</i>
<b>luib</b> ,	herb.—	<i>luib</i>	<i>luibe</i>	<i>luib</i>
<b>Ṫuais</b> ,	prize.—	<i>ṵuais</i>	<i>ṵuaise</i>	<i>ṵuais</i>
<b>áit</b> ,	place.—	<i>áit</i>	<i>áite</i>	<i>áit</i> .



23.—Nouns in -eac, -ac, have -iġe, -aiġe in G., and -iġ, -aiġ in D.—

	V.A.N.	G.	D.
Cailleac, hag.—	cailleac	cailiġe	cailiġ
Blátaac, buttermilk.—	blátaac	blátaġe	blátaġ
Lačac, mud, mire.—	lačac	lačaiġe	lačaiġ

But note the monosyllabic nouns :—

Beac, bee.—	V.A.N. beac.	G. beice.	D. beic
Sceac, briar.—	„ sceac	„ sceice	„ sceic
Creac, plunder.—	„ creac	„ creice	„ creic

24.—Syncope often takes place in G.sg.—buidéan, company ; bruigéan, palace. G.—buróne, bruigne.

25.—Deoc, drink.—V.A.N. deoc. G. oiġe D. oiġ  
muc, pig.— „ muc „ muice „ muic

26.—ġó, lie, deceit (now 4th declension, G. ġó) originally belonged to this declension (O.I. G. sg., gue). Toit, will (G. now toite, tola. O.I. G. tuile) ; ġabál (and all verbals in -ál), O.I. gabál, G. -ae, now G. -a (3rd) ; pearsa (G. now -n (5th), originally N. persan, G. persine (L. persona) ; litir (orig. a-stem, L. litera), G. now litre, litreac, Pl. litre, litreaca (due to K-stems).

27.—

Plural.

	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
Cos, foot.—	cosa	cos	cosaib	Δ cosa
Bróġ.—	bróġa	bróġ	bróġaib	Δ bróġa
Long.—	longa	long	longaib	Δ longa
Clann.—	clanna	clann	clannaib	Δ clanna
ġrian.—	ġriana	ġrian	ġrianaib	Δ ġriana
Pian.—	pianta	pianta	piantaib	Δ pianta
Scian.—	sciana	scian	sceanaib	Δ sceana
Ciall.—	—	—	—	—
ġéaġ.—	ġéaġa	ġéaġ	ġéaġaib	Δ ġéaġa
Fréam.—	fréama(ča)	fréam(āča)	fréamačaib	Δ fréamača
Spéan.—	spéarta	spéarta	spéartaib	Δ spéarta
Lil.—	lile	lil	lilib	Δ lile



	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
<b>luib.</b> —	luibeanna	luibeann(Δ)	luibeannaibh	Δ luibeanna
<b>duais.</b> —	duaiseanna	duaiseann(Δ)	duaiseannaibh	Δ duaiseanna
<b>áit.</b> —	áiteanna(-ača)	áiteann	áiteannaibh	Δ áiteanna
<b>cailleac.</b> —	cailleača	cailleac	cailleačaibh	Δ cailleača
<b>beac.</b> —	beača	beac	beačaibh	Δ beača
<b>sceac.</b> —	sceača	sceac	sceačaibh	Δ sceača
<b>creac.</b> —	creača	creac	creačaibh	Δ creača
<b>deoc.</b> —	deoča	deoc	deočaibh	Δ deoča
<b>muc.</b> —	muca	muc	mucaibh	Δ muc.

28.—The Dual.—(Same in form, in all cases, as D. sg.).  
(An dá) cois, bróis, luing, céill, géis, fréim, spéir, lil, luib, duais, áit, cáillis, beic, sceic, creic, óis, muc.

29.—**bean**, a woman.—N.A. pl.—mná. G. ban. D. mnáibh. V. Δ mná. N.B.—This noun, and the F. of the article are the only Δ-stems that follow the original declension. The G. sg. in -e in the 2nd declension is irregular.

30.—Note the *strong* plurals in -anna, -ača :—  
Cúis, cause (cúiseanna) ; béim, stroke (béimeanna) ;  
gluais, contrivance (gluaiseanna) ; oeil, lathe (oileanna) ; léim, leap (léimeanna) ; scoil, school (scoileanna) ; céim, step (céimeanna) ; feis, festival (feiseanna) ; sráir, street (sráireanna) ; páirc, field (páirceanna) ; uair, hour, time (uairianna, uaireanna) ; of these, béim, céim, léim, réim, were nn-stems, and belong by right to the 5th declension. Scol, scoil, has also a pl. scoltača (U.).

31.—Plurals in -ača, -eača :—

litir, letter ; obair, work ; paróir, prayer ; óráir, speech ; ub, egg ; ciúmais, edge ; truaill, scabbard ; leac, stone ; coisctóis, fortnight ; aibí, habit, costume.

### THIRD DECLENSION.

32.—This declension includes :—

(a) M. nouns in -óir, -dóir, -adóir, -úir, -neoir :—  
bádóir, boatman ; físeadóir, weaver ; doctúir, doctor ;  
cáilúir, tailor ; scríbhneoir, writer,



(b) Abstracts, Collectives, and others, in -**acht**. All F. except **fuacht**, cold, M. and monosyllabic nouns like **ceacht**, lesson; **céacht**, plough; **trácht**, river bank; **reacht**, statute. **Teacht**, coming, and **banntrácht**, women-folk, are M. and F.

(c) Other nouns ending in consonants (M. or F., as a rule, according as the final consonant is broad or slender). Names of males, however, are M.—**liadig**, physician, surgeon.

33.—I- stems in O.I. (as in Lat.) were M., F. or Neuter. U- stems (as in Lat.) were M. or Neuter.

## EXAMPLES.

34 (a).—

<b>bádóir</b> .—N.A.V.D.	<b>bádóir</b>	G. <b>bádóra</b> .
<b>fiḡeadóir</b> „	<b>fiḡeadóir</b> „	<b>fiḡeadóra</b>
<b>dochtúir</b> .— „	<b>dochtúir</b> „	<b>dochtúra</b>
<b>táilliúir</b> .— „	<b>táilliúir</b> „	<b>táilliúra</b>
<b>Scribneoir</b> .— „	<b>Scribneoir</b> „	<b>Scribneora</b>

35 (b).—

<b>beannaacht</b> .—N.A.V.D.	<b>beannaacht</b>	G. <b>beannaachta</b>
<b>mallacht</b> .— „	<b>mallacht</b> „	<b>mallachta</b>
<b>fuacht</b> .— „	<b>fuacht</b> „	<b>fuachta</b> .

36 (c).—

<b>Cnám</b> , bone (M)	N.A.V.D.	<b>cnám</b>	G. <b>cnáma</b>
<b>ḡníom</b> , deed (M)	„	<b>ḡníom</b> „	<b>ḡníoma</b>
<b>rud</b> , thing (M)	„	<b>rud</b> „	<b>roda</b>
<b>reann</b> , star (M)	„	<b>reann</b> „	<b>reanna</b> .

37 (d).—

<b>fuil</b> , blood (F)	N.A.V.D.	<b>fuil</b>	G. <b>folá</b>
<b>feoil</b> , flesh (F)	„	<b>feoil</b> „	<b>feola</b>
<b>táin</b> , multitude (F)	„	<b>táin</b> „	<b>tána</b>
<b>muir</b> , sea (M.F.)	„	<b>muir</b> „	<b>mara</b> (orig. Neuter)
<b>liadig</b> , physician (M)	„	<b>liadig</b> „	<b>leasá</b> .



## 38.—

<b>bíť,</b>	world	(M)	N.A.V.D.	<b>bíť</b>	G. <b>beaťa</b>
<b>řios,</b>	knowledge	(M)	„	<b>řios</b>	„ <b>řeasa</b>
<b>lios,</b>	fort	(M)	„	<b>lios</b>	„ <b>leasa</b>
<b>leas,</b>	improvement	(M)	„	<b>leas</b>	„ <b>leasa</b>
<b>cíť,</b>	shower	(M)	„	<b>cíť</b>	„ <b>ceaťa</b>
<b>cuio,</b>	share	(F)	„	<b>cuio</b>	„ <b>cođa</b>
<b>crios,</b>	girdle	(M)	„	<b>crios</b>	„ <b>creasa</b>
<b>đruim,</b>	back	(M)	„	<b>đruim</b>	„ <b>đroma</b>
<b>đrom,</b>	human back	(M)	„	<b>đrom</b>	„ <b>đroma</b>
<b>říť,</b>	running	(F)	„	<b>říť</b>	„ <b>reaťa</b>
<b>řiođ,</b>	tree, wood (	(M)	„	<b>řiođ</b>	„ <b>řeაđa.</b>

39.—**Cró** (G. *id.* F.), gore, blood, death (O.I. *crú*, G. *cró*) ; and **cnó**, nut, M. or F. (G. *id.*, Pl. *cná*, *cnóite* ; O.I. *cnú*, G. *cnó*, F.) belong to this declension, the ending being obscured by the long vowel.

## 40.—Changes :—

**řraiř,** F., rafters (O.I. G. *frega*, wall, partition). G. now **řraiře**. Pl. **řrařťaťa**.

**řraiř,** F., stud of horses (O.I. G. *grega*). G. now **řraiře**.

**ťailm,** F., sling (O.I. G. *telma*). G. now **ťailme**. Pl. **ťailmeaťa**.

**đorus,** M., door (O.I. Neut. G. *doirse*). G. now **đorus**. Pl. **đóirse**.

**amus,** M., hit, etc. (O.I. G. *aimseo*). G. now **amus**.

**ťómus,** M., guess, riddle (<\*to-fo-mess. O.I. G. *toimseo*, now **ťómus**).

**líon,** M., number, etc. (O.I. G. *lina*, now **lín**).

41.—**řníomarıťa**, used as N. pl. of **řníom**, is really the pl. of **řníomrađ** (Collective), deeds. Cf. **connarıťa**, compacts, covenants, pl. of **connrađ**.

## Plural.

42.—	<b>đáđóir</b>	<b>řířeađóir</b>	<b>đoťťúir</b>	<b>scribneoir</b>
V.A.N.G.	<b>đáđóirí</b>	<b>řířeađóirí</b>	<b>đoťťúirí</b>	<b>scribneoirí</b>
D.	<b>đáđóiríđ</b>	<b>řířeađóiríđ</b>	<b>đoťťúiríđ</b>	<b>scribneoiríđ</b>



43.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
<b>beannaċt.</b> —	beannaċta	beannaċt	beannaċtaib
<b>mallāċt.</b> —	mallāċta	mallāċt	mallāċtaib
<b>Cnám.</b> —	cnáma	cnám	cnámab
<b>ḡníom.</b> —	ḡníomarda	ḡníomarda	ḡníomardaib
<b>Rud.</b> —	rudai	rudai	ruduib
<b>Reann.</b> —	reanna	reann	reannaib

44.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
<b>ṭáin.</b> —	ṭáinte	ṭáinte	ṭáintib
<b>muir.</b> —	muire	muir	muirib
<b>líaiḡ.</b> —	leaiḡa	líaiḡ	leaiḡaib
<b>lios.</b> —	leasa	lios	leasaib
<b>Ciċ.</b> —	ceatana	ceatana	ceatanaib
<b>Cuid.</b> —	coḡaċa	coḡaċa	coḡaċaib
<b>Críos</b>	creasa	críos	creasaib
<b>Drúim (ḡrom)</b>	ḡromanna	ḡromanna	ḡromannaib

## FOURTH DECLENSION.

45.—This includes :—

(a) Personal nouns in —aíre (—uiríe), —aíre (—íre), —all M.

(b) Diminutives in —ín. All M.— Originally o— stems (1st declension).

(c) Abstracts in —e, formed from adjectives. All F. nowadays.

(d) All nouns ending in vowels, except ḡia, ḡa (1st decl.) ; cró, cnó (3rd decl.), and those which belong to the 5th decl. (consonantal stems).

(e) Note especially that ía, day (G. íae, Poet. íaoi, D. ía, íó) and ó, ua, grandson (V.G. uí, N.A. pl. uí) belong to this declension, and are the only nouns that preserve traces, in the sg., of the original inflections.

## EXAMPLES.

## Singular.

46.—(a) ḡadaíre, thief, M. ṭeaċtaire, messenger, M.

(b) Cailín, girl, M. báidín, little boat. M.



(c) **Déine**, ardour, intensity, F. **Óige**, youth. F.

(d) **Croíðe**, heart, M. **Duine**, person, M. **ƒiaðónaise**, testimony, F. **Oíðce**, night, F. **Aiðne**, acquaintance, F. **ré**, life, time, space, F.

47.—All the nouns in these classes (46) are *the same in all cases in the sg.*,—except with regard to aspiration and eclipsis. **lá** and **ó** are inflected as indicated in 45 (e).

### Plural.

48. **ḡaḡaíðe**.—V.A.N.G.—**ḡaḡaíðte**. D.—**ḡaḡaíðtib**. So all nouns with this termination, and others ending in **—ðe**, **—ḡe**, e.g., **croíðe**, heart, **uḡe**, forearm. Pl.—**croíðte**, **uḡte**.

**teacḡaire**.—V.A.N.G.—**teacḡairí**. D.—**teacḡairib**. So **teacḡairí**, etc.

**caitín**.—V.A.N.G.—**caitíní**. D.—**caitínib**. So all nouns in **—ín**.

**Déine**, ḡrl.—These abstracts are not used in the pl.

**Duine**.—V.A.N.G.—**ḡaome**. D.—**ḡaomib**.

**Oíðce**.—V.A.N.G.—**oíðceanta** (following **laeḡeanta**, pl. of **lá**, day). Also **oíðcí**, and (in Donegal) **—anna**.

**Aiðne**, commandment—V.A.N.G.—**aiðeanta**. D.—**aiðeantib**.

**ré**.—V.A.N.G.—**réite**. D.—**réitib**.

**reite**, ram.—V.A.N.G.—**reití**. D.—**reitib**.

**lá**.—V.A.N.G.—**laete**, **láite**, **laeḡeanta**. D.—**laetib**, **láitib**, **laeḡeantib**.

**ó, ua**.—V.A.N.—**uí**. G.—**ó, ua**. D.—**uib** (often used for N. in place names, e.g., **uib laogḡaire**).

49.—Plurals in **—te**:—In addition to the nouns specified in 48 (under **ḡaḡaíðe**) the following add **—te**:—**Caol**, way, etc. F. ; **ḡaol**, fool, M. ; **ḡraol**, druid, M. ; **ḡlaol**, curl, F. ; **laol**, lay, F. ; **ƒinné**, witness, M. ; **míle**, thousand, mile, M. (but after numerals the pl. is **míle**,—O.I. **mili**—**trí míle**, **seacḡ míle**, 3,000, 7,000) ;



ré, life, F. ; ní, thing, M. ; saoi, sage, M. Of these  
 ṽaoi, saoi, ṽraoi are properly consonantal stems.  
 Plurals :—caoiṽte, ṽaoiṽte, ṽraoiṽte, ṽlaoiṽte, laoṽte,  
 fínnéte, mílṽte, réiṽte, neṽte (níṽte), saoiṽte.

50.—Plurals in —te :—léine, shirt, F., baile, town,  
 M., stoinne, surname, M., teine, fire, F., cúinne, corner,  
 M. Pl.—léimṽte (also léimṽteaḍa), bailṽte (also bailṽtí,  
 bailṽteaḍa), stoinṽte, teimṽte (also teimṽteaḍa), cúimṽte  
 (also cúimní).

51.—múille, mule, M.—Pl.—múillí, múillṽte.

ṽnó, work, M.—Pl.—ṽnóḍa, ṽnóḍaí.

uinge, ounce, ingot, F.—Pl.—uimṽteaḍa.

easna, rib, lath, F.—Pl.—easnaí, easnaḍa,  
 easnaṽrṽteaḍa.

### FIFTH DECLENSION.

52.—We have in Irish stems ending in :—1° t- or ṽ-.  
 2° c-. 3° ṽ-. 4° n-. 5° nn-. 6° -nt (>ṽ). 7° r. 8° -s.

In 1°—6°, the characteristic consonant of the stem  
 disappears in the N. sg. (except in ṽéaṽ, tooth, teeth),  
 but generally reappears in the G. sg., so that we have  
 the syllables -aṽ, -aḥ, -ṽ (ríoiṽ), -an, -ann, -aṽ (from -ant),  
 serving in mod. I. as G. endings. The original G. ending  
 is lost. In 7° the characteristic consonant (-r) appears  
 in *all* the cases ; while in 8°, it (-s) *disappears* in all  
 (except mí, month, G. míosa. Here it is preserved by  
 the originally preceding -n).

### T. and D. Stems.

#### Singular.

53.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
teangā, tongue, F.—	teangā	teangāṽ	teangāṽṽ
ṽleo, strife, noise, M.—	ṽleo	ṽliāṽ	ṽliāṽṽ
saoi, sage, M.—	saoi	suāṽ	saoi
ṽraoi, druid, magician, M.—ṽraoi	ṽraoi	ṽruāṽ	ṽraoi
cré, earth, dust, clay, F.—	cré	criāṽ	criāṽṽ
ṽé, spark, dust, smoke, F.—ṽé	ṽé	ṽiāṽ	ṽiāṽṽ



G. now mostly *deíte*. 1 *noeire na deíte*—at the point of death.

**Cion**, sin, fault, M. and F.—V.A.N. *cion*. G. *cionad*. D. *cionad*.

54.—Many of these stems have passed over to the 4th declension :—*Teanga*, *teme*, *pile*, *léme*. *Troig*, foot, F., has now G. in *-e*, or *-te*. All these nouns show the original nature of the stem in the pl., where the dental appears :—*teangta*, *temte*, *pilí* (from *pilead*), *léimte*, *troigte*. *Míle*, soldier, orig. G. *mílead* (Lat. miles, milit-is) has now passed over to the 1st decl. N.—*mílead*, G. *míle*.

#### C (K-) Stems.

55.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
<b>CAṬAIR</b> , city, F.	<i>caṭair</i>	<i>caṭrac</i>	<i>caṭair</i> ( <i>caṭraiḡ</i> )
<b>NAṬAIR</b> , snake, F.	<i>naṭair</i>	<i>naṭrac</i>	<i>naṭair</i> ( <i>naṭraiḡ</i> )
<b>CRÁIN</b> , female, sow, F.	<i>cráin</i>	<i>cránac</i>	<i>cráin</i> ( <i>cránaiḡ</i> )
<b>CAORA</b> , sheep, ewe, F.	<i>caora</i>	<i>caorac</i>	<i>caora</i> ( <i>caoiriḡ</i> )
<b>SAIL</b> , willow, beam, F.	<i>sail</i>	<i>sala</i>	<i>sail</i> ( <i>sailiḡ</i> )
<b>Ceo</b> , mist, M.	<i>ceo</i>	<i>ciac</i>	now <i>ceo</i> ( <i>ceoiḡ</i> )

56.—Many nouns not originally belonging to this declension have been attracted to it, especially in the pl. Thus :—*Ḍair*, oak, F., has G. sg. *ḍaire*, *ḍarac*, *ḍaraiḡ* ; *Teamair*, Tara, G. *teamrac* (O.I.G. *Temro*) ; *caṭaoir*, chair, G. *caṭaoireac* (A. pl. in P.H. p. 163 *cathaire*) ; *ail*, cliff, F. (G. *aille*) has pl. *ailtrea*, as well as *aille* ; so *atair*, *mátair*, *brátair*, *ḍriotáir*, *siúr*, *ḍriofúr* (*deirbhsíúr*), all of them *r*-stems, have pl. *aitrea*, *maítrea*, *bráitrea*, *ḍriotáireac*, *siúra*, *deirbhséara*. The mod. *sceac*, G. *sceice* (23), however, was, in early Irish, N. *scé*, G. *sciac*. For other plurals in *-aca* see 30.

#### G- Stems.

57.—**Rí**, King, M.—N.A.V. *rí*. G. *riog*. D. *riḡ*. In the sg., however, *ḡ* usually disappears, so that all cases are *rí*. N. pl. *riḡte*. **brí**, a hill, M. N.A.V. *brí*. G. *breaḡ*. D. *bríḡ*.



## N- Stems.

58.—V.A.N. **cú**, hound, F. (M. in O.I.). G. **con**.  
D. **com**.

„ **eascú**, eel. G. **eascon**. D. **eascom**.

„ **bró**, quern, F. G. **brón**. D. **bróm**.

„ **breiteam**, judge M. G. **breiteamán**  
(**breitím**). D. **breiteamán** (**breiteam**).

**ḡobnait** (Girl's name); **naoiðe**, babe, M.F.; **talam**, earth, M.F.; **múma**, Munster, F.; **Alba**, Scotland, F. also belong to this declension.

**teansa** (53) and **peansa** (orig. a- stem) have been attracted to this declension. G. **teangan**, **pearsan**. D. **teangam**, **pearsam**.

## NN- Stems.

59.—

V.A.N.—**brú**, womb, F. G. **bronn** D. **bruinn**

„ —**éire**, Ireland, F. „ **éireann** „ **éirinn**

„ —**ḡual**, shoulder, F. „ **ḡualann** „ **ḡualainn**.

Like these are declined—**abla**, Host, F.; **ḡabla**, smith, M.; **abla**, river, F.; **oile**, deluge, F.

60.—The old Neuters :—**amm**, M.F., **bém**, F., **cém**, M.F., **léim**, F., **réim**, F., **ḡreim**, M., **tuitim**, F., **naðom**, F. (mostly **snaðom**, F., now), **maðom**, M.F., **seinnm**, M., **ḡairm**, F. **foḡlum**, F., belonged originally to this declension. Owing to a short G. ending (-s, instead of -os) they dropped -nn in G. sg. which is now :—**aimme**, **béime**, **céime**, **léime**, **réime**, **ḡreama**, **tuitme**, **naðoma** (**snaðome**), **maðoma**, **seannma** (**seimme**), **ḡarma**, **foḡluma**. They are generally put in 2nd or 3rd declension, but they are nn- stems, and -nn- generally appears in the pl.—**annanna** (**ainmneada**), **béimeanna**, **céimeanna**, **léimeanna**, **réimeanna**, **ḡreamanna**, **naðomanna**, **maðomanna**, **ḡarmanna**. **Tuitim**, **seinnm**, **foḡlum** do not occur in pl. **ím**, butter, M. (G. **ime**) and **míor**, portion, F. (G. **míre**; Pl. **míoranna**) also belong to this declension.



61.—Many of the nouns in 59 tend to use D. sg. as N. and inflect according to 2nd declension. V.A.N.D. broinn, áblainn, ábainn, dílinn. G. broinne (bruinne), áblainne, ábainne, dílinne.

62.— NT- Stems.

N.A.V.—CARA, friend, M.F. G. CARAO D. CARAO  
 „ —FÍCE, twenty, F. „ FÍCEAO „ FÍCIO  
 „ —NÁMA, enemy, M.F. „ NÁMAO „ NÁMAIO  
 „ —DÉAO, tooth, teeth, M. „ DÉIO (Orig. Neut. Now 1st declension)  
 „ —NUAÖA (Proper Name) „ NUAÖAT (τ=ö).  
 MÁŠ NUAÖAT, Maynooth.

63.— R- Stems.

V.A.N.D.—AČAIR, father, M. G. AČAR.  
 „ —MÁČAIR, mother, F. G. MÁČAR.  
 „ —BRÁČAIR, kinsman, friar, M. G. BRÁČAR.  
 „ —ORIOČAIR, brother, M. G. ORIOČAR.  
 „ —SIÚR, sister, female relative, nun, F. G. SEČAR (SIÚIRE, SIÚRA, SEČRAC. D. sometimes SIΔAIR).  
 „ —ORIFIÚR (=DEIRBŠIÚR), sister, F. G. ORIFÉAR (DEIRBSEČAR).

64.— S- Stems.

(V.)A.N.D.—SLIΔÖ, mountain, M. G. SLÉIBE.  
 (V.)A.N. —TEAC, house, M. „ TIGE. D. TIG.  
 (V.)A.N. —MÁŠ, plain, F. „ MUIGE (MAIGE).  
 D. MUIŠ.  
 V.A.N. —LEAC, side, F. „ LEITE. D. LEIT.  
 „ —UŠ (Munster UB), egg, F. G. UIŠE (UIBE).  
 D. UIŠ (UIB).

In Munster generally M. G. UIB.

V.A.N.D.—ŠLEANN, glen, M. G. ŠLEANNA (O.I. glinne).  
 „ —NEAM, sky, heaven, F. G. NEIME, NIME.

CLÚ, fame, M.F. (G. clú), and ŠNÉ, species, F. (G. ŠNÉ) are s- stems. O.I. G. gnee, clua=cluae).



## Plural of Consonantal Stems.

65.—Consonantal stems form their pl.—(a) By attenuating the G. sg. (b) By adding -Δ to G. sg. (c) By adding -e to G. sg. (d) Some by adding -i. (e) Some by adding -ΔΔ, -anna, -te, or -τα.

66.—Outside s- stems (which in O.I. had pl. in -e), and neuter nn- stems (which had N. pl. in -nn), the N. pl. ended in a slender consonant (method a). The other methods are due, partly to s- stems, and partly to confusion between the N. pl. and the A. pl. (which latter, except in neuter nn- stems, ended in a vowel in O.I.).

67 (a).—Pl. in a slender consonant :—

**Cú**, N. pl. cum (cona, comte, cumte). G. con. D. conaiḃ  
**CAORA**, N. pl. CAOIRIḡ. G. CAORAĆ. D. CAORAĆAIḃ  
**LAÇA**, N. pl. LAÇAM. G. LAÇAN. D. LAÇANAḃ  
**ḡice**, N. pl. ḡicṛo (ḡicṛoi). G. ḡiceao. D. ḡiceaoaiḃ  
 (ḡicṛoiḃ).  
**Cómursa**, N. pl. cómursam (Or -na). G. cómursan.  
 D. cómursanaḃ.  
**breiteam**, N. pl. breiteamain (breitím). G. breiteamán.  
 D. breiteamnaḃ.

68 (b).—Plurals in -a :—

**pearsa**, N. pl. pearsana. G. pearsan. D. pearsanaḃ.  
**naoiḃe**, N. pl. naoiḃeana. G. naoiḃean. D. naoiḃeanaḃ.  
**Ceo**, mist (G. sg. ciac, ceoiḡ). N. pl. ceoça.  
 Also—cókursana, máḡa, míosa.

69 (c).—Plurals in -e :—

**CARA**, N. pl. cáirḃe ; náma, náimḃe ; ḡaḃa, ḡaiḃne ;  
 ḡuala, ḡuaiḃne ; aḃa, aiḃne.

70 (d).—Plurals in -í :—aḃa, aiḃnní ; aḃla, aḃlainní  
 (aḃlainna) ; ḡicé, ḡicṛoi ('na ḃḡicṛoiḃ, in scores).

71 (e).—Strong Plurals :—Teac, tiḡte (O.I. tige) ;  
 ri, riḡte (O.I. A. rioga) ; aḡair, aiḡreac, etc. (see 56) ;



CAṬAOIR, CAṬAOIREACĀ ; TEANGA, TEANGTACĀ ; SAOI, SAOITE ;  
 DRAOI, DRAOITE ; CION, fault, M.F., CIONTA (these last  
 four were dental stems) ; AIMM, AIMMNEACĀ ; CRÉ, earth,  
 F. (G. sg. CRÍAR, D. CRÍAR. But, in modern prose,  
 G.D. CRÉ) CRÉIRÉANNA ; TEIME, TEIMTE ; FÍLE, FÍLÍ (O.I.  
 filid, later fílróe, and so fílí) ; LÉIME, shirt, F., LÉIM-  
 TEACĀ ; CEO, CEOĀNNA (also regular CEOĀ, A c- stem) ;  
 BRÓ, BRÓIMTE (*double pl.* An n- stem) ; TALAM, TALMAMTE  
 (*double pl.*) TALIMTE, TALTA ; BÉIM, BÉIMEANNA (and many  
 others. See 60. Final a irregular) ; SLIAB, SLÉIBTE  
 (O.I. slé(i)bē) ; GLEANN, GLEANNTA (O.I. glinne), GLEANNTAÍ  
 (Ulster) ; LEAT, side (s- stem), LEATANNA, LEITEANNA ;  
 Uḡ (uḃ), UIḡEACĀ, UIBEACĀ. Also, regular, UIḡE, UIBE  
 (s- stem) ; TÍR, TÍORTĀ.

72.—These endings— -ANA, -ANNA, -ACĀ, -TE, -TA  
 (-ĊE, -ĊĀ), -ANNTA, -TEACĀ, -Í—are due to the influence  
 of n-, nn-, c- and dental stems. The endings -ANNTA,  
 -TEACĀ are combinations of -ANN and -TA, and of -TE and  
 -ACĀ respectively. They have made their way not only  
 into the declension of vocalic stems, but interchange  
 amongst the consonantal stems themselves. Thus :—

- (a) ĊE, ĊĀ, TA are attached to s- stems : TÍḡTE, TÍORTĀ,  
 SLÉIBTE, GLEANNTA ; and to n- stems : BRÓIMTE,  
 TALMAMTE.
- (b) ACĀ (properly belonging to c- stems) is attached  
 to :—1° R- stems : AITREACĀ, MÁITREACĀ, etc. 2°  
 Dental stems :—LÉIMTEACĀ, TEANGTACĀ. 3° The  
 s- stem Uḡ, uḃ, UIḡEACĀ UIBEACĀ. 4° nn- stems :  
 AIMMNEACĀ.
- (c) -ANA, -ANNA (from n- and nn- stems) are attached  
 to—1° c- stems : CEOĀNNA (the ō is only “padding”  
 between vowels). 2° t- and d- stems : CRÉIRÉANNA.  
 3° s- stems : LEATANNA, MÍONNA (mÍOSA).
- (d) -Í (from dental stems, rō, rōe, í) is attached to—  
 1°. The nt- stem FÍCE, pl. FÍCRÓÍ (FÍCRÓ, regular). 2°  
 The nn- stems, AḂĀ, AḂĪĀ, pl. AIBNNÍ, AḂĪANNÍ.
- (e) In Rathlin Irish plurals in -AN, -EAN, -ANN, are  
 common with all stems :—



τὰ μο ἐκρίθε βριστε, βρούτε,  
 is tric na deoir a rit bo mo súilean (C-Ć.U. 102),—  
 My heart is bruised and broken, and frequent tears have  
 run from my eyes.

So also :—brógan (a- stem), cáirdean (nt- stem),  
 batan (io- stem), mnán, women (a- stem), fearann  
 (o- stem), etc.

73. A unique *diphthongal* stem is bó, cow, F. Sg.  
 V.A.N.G. bó. D. bum (due to com). Pl. N.A.V. ba.  
 G. bó. D. buaib.

74 (a).—The G. pl. of consonantal stems is often the  
 same as G. sg.—except in neut. nn- stems, and s- stems,  
 which lose the characteristic consonant in G. sg. R-  
 stems are also different, because they take -ada in the  
 pl. N. plurals in -ada, -anna, -ana, -ta, -te, ta, -te, -i,  
 often retain these endings in the G. pl.

(b).—The D. pl. ends in :—1° -aib, when the N. pl.  
 ends in -a, or in a slender consonant. 2° -ib, when N. pl.  
 ends in -e. 3° -iib, when N. pl. ends in -i.

(c).—The V. pl. ends in :—1° -a, when D. pl. ends  
 in -aib. 2° -e, when D. pl. ends in -ib (-ib is replaced  
 by -e). 3° -i, when N. pl. ends in -i.

75.—Indeclinable nouns :—Some proper names like  
 íosa, pádraig, gearóro, Siubán, Muiris. Also the two  
 common nouns, toga, choice (objective), roga, choice  
 (subjective). In the line—"is tu mo roga in ear mnáib  
 an domáin" (L.O.), roga is used for the sake of asso-  
 nance with domáin.

76.—Muma, Munster, is an n- stem. ulaib (N. pl.  
 o- stem)=Ultonians ; laigin (N. pl. o- stem)=Leinster  
 men ; Connacta (N. pl.)=Connaught-men. G. pl.  
 ulaib, laigean, Connacta.



## CHAPTER III.

### THE ADJECTIVE (77—109).

77.—For the purpose of declension, adjectives, like nouns, are divided according to the nature of the stem. This gives us the following groups :—

**First Declension** :—Adjectives ending in a broad consonant. E.g.—*mór*, great, *ʒeal*, white, bright. These include :—(a) *o*— and *a*— stems, *mór*, *ʒeal*. (b) *u*— stems, like *ʋub*, black, *ʔiuc*, wet, *tiug*, thick. The dissyllabic *uasal*, *iseal*, *ʋileas*, *ʔollus*, have, in G.sg.F. and N.pl. *uaste*, *iste*, *ʋilse*, *ʔollse*, owing (in the pl.) to *i*- stems (O.I. *uaisli*, *isli*, *dilsli*). Instead of *ʋileas* we have also *ʋilis* (2nd decl.).

**Second Declension** :—Adjectives ending in a slender consonant, like *maic*, *ʋilis* (except those in —*amail*). These are all *i*—stems.

**Third Declension** :—Adjectives in —*amail*. Originally *i*— stems like *maic*, and declined like it. But O.I. *sainemlae* (G. sg. F. and G. pl.) and *sainemlai* (V.A.N. pl.) became *saineamlā*, thus separating the two types. O.I. *maithi* (V.A.N. pl.) become *maice*.

**Fourth Declension** :—Adjectives ending in a vowel, including participles in —*ta*, —*te*, —*ta*, —*te*. These embrace (a) *io*—, —*ia* stems :—*ʋorča*, *uile*, *nua*, *clé*, *neamrōa*, *ʔavā*, *ʋéantā*, *ʔrl*. (b) The *o*— stem *beo* (A trace of the old declension survives in *mac ʋé ʋi*, Son of the Living God).

“*nó a mīc ʋé ʋi cia ʒní ʋo ʋiāro-sa ʋān*” (*Éamonn ʋurōe*)—Or who, O Son of the Living God, shall make a poem after you ? (the dead poet). With this exception, all these adjectives are uninflected in sg. and pl. In mod. I. the Dual in all adjectives is the same as the pl.



## EXAMPLES.

78.—First Declension :—mór, great ; oileas, loyal, beloved.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.—D.A.N.—mór; oileas. M.F.—V.A.N.D.—móra; oílse	
V.G.—móir ; oílis. G.—mór(Δ) ; oileas (oílse).	
F.—V.A.N.—mór ; oileas. G.—móire ; oílse. D.—móir ; oílis.	{ Reamhar (ramhar), thick, stout, has pl. reamra (ram-ra). G.sg.F. reimre (raim-re). Gearr, short, G.sg.F. giorra. Pl. gearra.

N.B.—The D.pl. termination found in nouns is never, in mod. I., attached to adjectives, unless they are used as nouns. E.g.—bíod truaḡ aḡat do boḡtaib Oé—have pity on God's poor. But—bí truaḡ aḡam do sna (na) fearaib boḡta—I pitied the poor fellows. In the G.pl. there is a tendency to assimilate to the other cases—Uliam na mbuaḡaillim bāna—The Year of the Whiteboys.

79.—Second Declension :—maíḡ, good ; oílis, loyal, beloved.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.—V.A.N.D.G.—maíḡ, oílis. M.F.—V.A.N.D.—maíḡe ; oílse.	
F.—V.A.N.D.—maíḡ, oílis. G.—maíḡ(e) ; oílis	
G.—maíḡe ; oílse. (oílse).	

The adjectives deaḡair, difficult ; socair, easy ; cóir, right, have G.sg.F., and pl.—deaḡra, socra, córa. Seascair, comfortable, and fíadām, wild, have G.sg.F., and Pl. seascaire, fíadāme (without syncope).

80.—Third Declension :—fearamail, manly ; banamail, womanly.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.F.—V.A.N.D.—fearamail, banamail. G.—fearamla, banamla.	fearamla, banamla.
	fearamail, banamail (or —amla).

N.B.—The G.sg. in —a was originally F. only, the M. being in —amail.



81.—**Fourth Declension** :—With the exception noted above (77) there is no inflection whatever for gender, number or case. The adjective *te*, warm, was originally an *nt*-stem (Cf. Lat. *tepens*, *tepent*—). But, as no trace of the consonant now remains, it falls in with the *io*-stems. It has, however, *teo*, in G. sg. F., and in the pl.

82.—Many dissyllabic adjectives in the 2nd, and all in the 3rd declension (like *oileas*, *uasal*, in the 1st) are syncopated in the G. sg. F., and in the pl. E.g.—*deacair*, *deacra* ; *socair*, *socra* ; *mílís*, *mílse* ; *doibinn*, *doibne* ; *álúinn*, *áinne* (*áille*) ; and those in *-amail*, when *-a* is added. But note *fiadaine*, *seascaire*. *Breáḡ*, fine, has G. sg. F. *breáḡa*. Pl. *breáḡa*.

83.—Vowel-changes, due to attenuation, are the same as those which occur in nouns : (a) Monosyllabic adjectives with *-ea-* before the final consonant change *-ea-* into “*i*” or “*eí*” :—*ḡeal*, bright, G. sg. M. *ḡil*, F. *ḡile* ; *meall*, quick, *mírl*, *míre* ; *ceart*, right, *círl*, *círte* ; *beag*, little, *bíḡ*, *bíge* ; *ḡearr*, short, *ḡírl*, *ḡiorra*. But—*teann*, stern, *teinn*, *teinne* ; *deas*, pretty, *deis*, *deise* ; *dearg*, red, *deirḡ*, *deirge* ; *seasc*, barren, *seisc*, *seisce* ; *searb*, bitter, *seirb*, *seirbe* ; *seang*, slender, *seimḡ*, *seimge* ; *leasc*, loth, *leisc*, *leisce* ; *tearc*, scarce, *teirc*, *teirce*.

(b) *o-* gives *ui-* :—*boḡ*, soft, *buíḡ*, *buíge* ; *trom*, heavy, *truim*, *truime* ; But—*boct*, poor, *boíct*, *boícte* ; *doct*, tight, hard, *doíct*, *doícte* ; *noct*, naked, *noíct*, *noícte*.

(c) *ia-* gives *éi-* :—*fiat*, generous, *féil*, *féile* ; *cian*, far, *cém*, *céme* ; *oian*, severe, *oém*, *oéme* ; *fiar*, awry, G. sg. F. *féire*.

(d) *iu-* gives *-i-* ; *-iú-* gives *-iúi-* :—*flúic*, wet, *flíc*, *flíce* ; *ciún*, calm (also *ciúm*), *ciúm*, *ciúme*. But *tiúḡ*, thick, dense, quick. G. sg. F. mostly *tiúḡa*.

(e) Final *-ac*, *-eac* become *-aíḡ*, *-aíge*, *-íḡ*, *-íge* :—*bacac*, lame, *bacaiḡ*, *bacaiḡe* ; *oíreac*, straight, —*oíríḡ*, *oíríge* ; *Sasanac*, English. G. sg. M., *Sasanaíḡ*.

(f) *-io-* becomes *-i-* ; *-íio-* becomes *-í-* :—*fionn*, fair, *finn*, *finne* ; *míon*, small, *-mín*, *míne* ; *críon*, withered, *crín*, *críne*.



## Formation of Adjectives

84.—A.—By means of suffixes (added to nouns, adjectives, numerals, verb-roots, prepositions) :—1° *-ac* :—*Rómánac*, Roman ; *bacac*, lame ; *burdeac*, thankful (<*burde*, good-will, thanks) ; *cuibsad*, middling ; *faicéiosac*, shy, fearful. 2° *-amail* :—*fearamail*, manly ; *banamail*, womanly ; *Críostamail*, Christ-like ; *magamail*, mocking. 3° *-aire, íre* :—*Críostaire*, Christian ; *beo-aire*, sweetmouthed, fastidious ; *leanbairde*, childish ; *diablaire*, devilish ; *éiscéillire*, absurd, irrational. 4° *-da, -ta, -ta* :—*maor-da*, majestic ; *beo-da*, lively ; *iolar-da*, plural ; *coibneasta*, related ; *mór-da*, stately. 5° *-mar* :—*neartmar*, strong ; *briogmar*, full of “go” ; *greannmar*, queer, funny ; *fonnmar*, glad, willing. 6° *-te, -ta, -te, -ta* :—*buaite*, struck ; *molta*, praised ; *iméiste*, gone away ; *rágta*, left. 7° *-to, -eto* (I. *-eao*) :—*cúigeao*, seiseao, 5th, 6th. 8° The double suffix *-mmo + -eto* (I. *-mao*) :—*triomaao*, 3rd, *ceatramaao*, 4th. In the I.G. period sometimes *-mo* was used, sometimes *-to*. Lat. *decimus*, 10th (<\**dekm-mo-s*), Gk. *dékatos* (<\**dekm-to-s*). The two are combined in I. *-mao*. 9° *-ineac, -anac* :—*toiteanac*, willing ; *olustineac*, legal ; *ainmneac*, Nominative ; *Albanac*, Scottish ; *marcanac*, lasting. 10° *-lo* :—*uasal*, noble (<*ós*, above) ; *iseal*, lowly (<*íos*, below).

B.—By combination of noun and adjective, without any suffix :—*neartmar* (84 A.5) < *neart + mór*, lit. strength-great. So *ceann-dána*, headstrong. The adjective *dómarac* must be derived from *dóbar* (not *dó*), as the suffixes *-mar* and *-ac* are not combined. (Proper spelling, *dóbarac*). Mod. I. allows participles as the 2nd element : *cosnoctaithe*, barefooted.

C.—By prefixing an uninflected particle to a noun :—1° *Saróbir*, rich ; *daróbir*, poor (<*dóbar*, material, with particles *so-*, *do*) ; *sútam*, everlasting (<*tan*, time) ; *deogair*, diphthong (<*de*, composition form of *dó*, two, and *poair*, sound) ; *suaicéir*, well-known (*so-dait-ghát*). The words *mcinn*, brain (<*m-ceann*), *Diarmuid*, Dermot (<*di-formad*), and *deogair*, have become nouns. From these exx. it appears that nominal



o- stems became i- stems when adjectives were formed in this way. 2° So also io- stems and ia- stems mostly became i- stems :—Soilbír, cheerful ; doilbír, melancholy (<labra, speech, +so- and -oo). But cómarba, successor (it has become a noun), from O.I. orbe, heir, remains an io- stem. 3° The mod. socháir, candid, and docháir, gloomy—both from the u- stem cruí, form, shape—are i- stems, instead of O.I. sochrud, dochrud (u- stems). So cubair, fitting, is an i- stem, although derived from O.I. fid (u- stem), a letter of the Alphabet.

D.—By joining two adjectives together :—lán-brónac, in great sorrow ; beag-maiteasac, ne'er-do-well ; mór-cúiseac, conceited ; uile-cómactac, almighty.

### Comparison of Adjectives

85.—There are three degrees—Positive, Comparative and Superlative. There is now no *equative form*, but the *equation* is expressed by the positive (or ordinary form of the adjective), preceded by cóm (as), and followed by le (as) before a noun or pronoun, or by agus (as) before a verb :—nílim-se cóm láir le Samson—I'm not as strong as Samson ; tá Conubair cóm holc le Cáit—Connor is as bad as Cáit ; nílim-se cóm maic liomsa—you are not as good as I. But—nílim cóm láir anois 7 a bíos an uair sin—I'm not as strong now as I was then.

### Comparative and Superlative

86.—In mod. I. the comparative and superlative are the same in form. The termination -e (in a few cases, -a) must be added to the positive, with attenuation of the final consonant of the positive, where necessary. Thus : geat, bright, gite, brighter, brightest ; riad, generous, réile, more (most) generous ; fluic, wet, flíce, wetter, wettest ; air, high, airíoe (áiríoe), higher, highest ; láir, strong, láíroe, stronger, strongest.

### The Comparative

87.—(a) When the verb of the comparative clause is "is," the comparative follows is immediately :—Is gite an grían ná an geatac—the sun is brighter than the



moon ; *is fearr an t-imreas ná an t-uaigneas*—contention is better than loneliness ; *ní measa cáit ná concubair*—the one is as bad as the other ; *is fearr beic díomáoin ná droc-ghótaic*—it is better to be idle than evil-doing. Such sentences may of course be relative, e.g.—*Níl doinne is measa ná tu*—there is no one (who is) worse than you.

(b) When the verb of the comparative clause is *tá*, or any verb other than *is*, the comparative must be preceded by *níos*, or *níba*, and the construction becomes relative :—*Tá an ghrian ag taitneamh níos gile mhu ná mar a bí sí iné*—the sun is shining more brightly to-day than it was yesterday ; *buail níos déime é*—strike it harder. (*Níos gile*=*ní a is gile*—*lit.* a something that is brighter) ; *bí an lá iné níba flice ná mar a cheapas a beo sé*—yesterday was wetter than I thought it would be.

“ *ní* ” in these sentences is an *Accusative of Extent in Degree* (Syntax, 175 A.4.). In other sentences it may be :—1° N. to a verb :—*Tá níos mó ann ná cheapá*—there's more in it than one would think. 2° A. governed by a transitive verb :—*tuḡas níos mó ná san tuit*—I gave you more than that. 3° A. governed by a preposition :—*san níos mó ná trí scillinge 'na póca aige*—with only 3s. in his pocket. 4° Absolute :—*ní fios cia'cu níos mó nó níos tuḡa a bí ann*—there's no knowing whether there was more or less in it.

### The Superlative

88.—(a) Superlative clauses are always relative, and the verb is always *is*. E.g.—*Ag an bfeair is fearr is ceart an post is fearr a beic*—the best man should get the best post.

(b) There are no comparative or superlative *adverbs* in mod. I. These forms are always adjectives, are never inflected for gender or number, and are always predicate N. to some form of the verb *is* :—*An tu an té is sine acu ?* Are you the eldest ? *'Sí an tír is doibne ar bít le fásán* (L.O.)—it is the pleasantest land in the world.



(c) The word *ná* (than) was, in O.I., in 3rd person sg., *oldaas* (than is), <ol+taas, a peculiar relative form of *ta*. In middle I. *in* was substituted for *ol*, giving *indaas*, then *ionás*, *ioná*, *ná*.

(d) The two nouns, *sinnséar*, elder, ancestor, and *sóiseár*, junior, are, in form, comparative adjectives. *Sinnséar* is a *double* compar. from *seán*, old (<\*sen-isteros), like Lat. *magister*, *minister* (master, servant. *Lit.*—the greater one, the lesser one). This compar. suffix *-ter* is common in I. E.g., *ceanntár*, district. Originally, the district *on this side* (of a mountain, river) as opposed to *aitéar*, district *on the other side*. So—*oirtéar*, East, as opposed to *iaréar*, West.

### Irregular Comparison

89.— <i>Pos.</i>	<i>Comp. and Superl.</i>
1.— <i>beag</i> , small.	<i>lúgá</i>
2.— <i>óóic</i> , likely.	<i>óóca</i> , <i>óóicíge</i> .
3.— <i>áir</i> , high.	<i>aoirde</i> ( <i>áirde</i> ).
4.— <i>fa</i> , long.	<i>sia</i> ( <i>fu</i> ).
5.— <i>fo</i> , near.	<i>foise</i> ( <i>foise</i> ) <i>neasa</i> .
6.— <i>gearr</i> , short.	<i>giorra</i> .
7.— <i>iom</i> , many a.	<i>lia</i> .
8.— <i>lu</i> , quick, early.	<i>túise</i> ( <i>luaité</i> ).
9.— <i>minic</i> , frequent.	<i>minicí</i> ( <i>mionca</i> ).
10.— <i>ma</i> , good.	<i>fearr</i> .
11.— <i>mór</i> , great.	<i>mó</i> .
12.— <i>ionmhuin</i> , beloved.	<i>annsa</i> .
13.— <i>olc</i> , bad.	<i>measa</i> .
14.— <i>te</i> , hot, warm.	<i>teo</i> .
15.— <i>brea</i> , fine.	<i>brea</i> .
16.— <i>treán</i> , strong.	<i>treise</i> ( <i>tréme</i> ).
17.— <i>u</i> , easy.	<i>usa</i> ( <i>fusa</i> ).
18.— <i>cóir</i> , right.	<i>córa</i> .
19.— <i>deacair</i> , difficult.	<i>deacra</i> .
20.— <i>socair</i> , settled.	<i>socra</i> .
21.— <i>gar</i> , near.	<i>goire</i> .
22.— <i>seascair</i> , cosy.	<i>seascaire</i> .
23.— <i>fiadha</i> , wild.	<i>fiadhaime</i> .



## Proverbs

(Illustrating comparatives and superlatives)

90.—

1. Ní lúga an fíriúe ná mátaíe an uile—Evil may spring from anything (no matter how small. fíriúe, fíriúe=flesh-worm).

2. Ní dóiciúe doinníe ná an bréag do meall tu—The lie that beguiled you seems most likely.

3. Ní haoirúe do cúro ná do clú—Your name is higher than your riches.

4. Ní sía rítríe leat ná mar is toil le Dia—You'll succeed just as long as God wishes.

5. Is goire (do) dúine cabáir Dé ná an dorús—God's help is always very near. *Lit.*—God's help is nearer one than the door.

6. Ní lía ceann ná céadparíe—Everyone has his own opinion.

7. Is cúisge díogaltas Dé ná an díabhal—God's vengeance is quicker than the devil.

8. Is fearr ciall ceannaig ná an dá céill a múntear—Sense bought is twice as good as sense taught.

9. Ní measa Cáit (cái) ná Concubair—The one is as bad as the other.

10. Is treise dútcas ná oileamaint.—Nature is stronger than environment.

11. Is usa dul isteach i rí níl ná teacht as—Palaces are pitfalls.

12. Ní h-annsa cóir ná coir le dúine dána—A bold man prefers wrong to right.

## Notes on Irregular Comparison

91.—2. Dóic, likely, O.I. doich (o), Gk. dókei, it seems. The O.I. compar. was dochu (our dóca). When dóca ceased to be *felt* as compar. a new compar. (and superl.), dóiciúe, was formed.

4. Sía—compar. of síor, long. The compar. and superl. are used of time and space; síor now only of time.

7. Lía—compar. of il (iol), many, now used only as a prefix.

12. Annas=O.I. annsu, compar. of annse (an-asse, not easy). Cf. the use of measa—Is measa liom tusa ná



Seán—I prefer you to Sean. *Lit.*—Your case is worse in my estimation than S.'s (Therefore, I prefer you).

11, 16. In mó, sí, creise, a suffix found in the pos. is omitted. A pos. form creis is heard in Co. Clare.

92.—Adverbs are formed from adjectives usually by prefixing go (to) to the positive, the latter being a neut. substantive in the A. case. Tá sé ag tuit i bpreabas go mór—he is improving much (*Lit.* to a great extent). The prep. de (do) is sometimes used :—de síor, de ghnácht=always. Sác nóiread, straight on, occurs in the literature.

### Numeral Adjectives

#### Cardinal

93.— 1. aon.	31. aon déag is fiche.
2. dó.	40. daicad.
3. trí.	41. aon is daicad.
4. ceathair.	50. deic is daicad.
5. cúig.	51. aon déag is daicad.
6. sé.	60. trí fich.
7. seacht.	61. aon 7 trí fich.
8. ocht.	70. deic 7 trí fich.
9. naoi.	71. aon déag 7 trí fich.
10. deic.	80. ceitre fich.
11. aon déag.	81. aon is ceitre fich.
12. dó déag.	90. deic is ceitre fich.
13. trí déag.	91. aon déag is ceitre fich.
14. ceathair déag.	99. naoidéag is ceitre fich.
15. cúig déag.	100. céad.
16. sé déag.	200. dá céad.
17. seacht déag.	300. trí céad.
18. ocht déag.	400. ceitre céad.
19. naoi déag.	500. cúig céad.
20. fiche.	600. sé céad.
21. aon is fiche.	700. seacht scéad.
22. dó is fiche.	800. ocht scéad.
29. naoi is fiche.	900. naoi scéad.
30. deic is fiche.	1000. míle.

N.B.—Besides such forms as trí is fiche (23) we also have—trí ficcad, or trí ar fich.



94.—If the old words for 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90 are used, *viz.*, τριοῦσα, τετραῦσα, πενήσα, ἑκασκα, ἑαῖς-μοῦσα, ὀκτμοῦσα, νόσα (nt- stems, G. in -ο) we get neater and shorter forms in the compound numerals, all of which (except those for 20, 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90, 100, etc.) will be based on the first ten numerals. Thus :—Σέ ὀέας (16), σέ ῥίσεαο (26), σέ τριοῦσαο (36), σέ τετραῦσαο (46), σέ πενήσαο (56), σέ ἑκασκαο (66), σέ ἑαῖς-μοῦσαο (76), σέ ὀκτμοῦσαο (86), σέ νόσαο (96). The use of αῖρ in τρί αῖρ ῥίσεο (23), τρί αῖρ πενήσαο (53), etc., is an extension of the O.I. usage, in which it served two purposes :—(a) to join the hundreds to the smaller numbers—ἑκασκα αῖρ ἑέαο, 160 ; (b) to join the tens to numeral substantives—δίας αῖρ ῥίσεο (οἷς αῖρ ῥίσεο), twenty-two persons.

95.—The Cardinals are used in three different ways :—  
1° Preceded by a particle α (α n- before vowels) when counting objects without naming them—α n-αον, α ὀό, ῥηλ. Τά σέ τετ-αῖρ τρεῖς α τρί—it is half-past three ; or when preceded by the noun, as καίριοι α τρί, chapter 3 ; or when the numeral is separated from the noun by the prep. οε :—α τρί νό α τετ-αῖρ οε βλιανταῖο—three or four years. 2° They are used without any particle in abstract counting, as—αον, ὀό, τρί,—one, two, three ; or when the noun follows immediately—τρί καπαιτ—three horses. 3° In concrete enumeration, when the noun is used without οε, it is placed after the unit number (if there be one) in the sg., pl., or dual, as the sense demands. Instead of ὀό, τετ-αῖρ (2, 4) ὀά (ὀά) ἑῖς are used.—αον βλιαμ ὀέας—11 years (sg.) ; ὀά βλιαμ ὀέας—12 years (dual) ; τρί βλιανὰ ῥίσεαο, 23 years (pl.) ; αον ἑαῖρ ὀέας—11 hens (sg.) ; ὀά ἑῖρ ὀέας—12 hens ; τρί ἑαῖρ ἑκασκαο—63 hens.

96.—The words for the tens from 20—100, as also mίle (1000), mίλλιόν (a million), βίλλιόν (a billion) are nouns, and so properly take G. pl. But as the G. pl. is often the same as the N. sg., the latter is used as a rule :—ῥίσε ῥεαῖρ, ἑαῖρ, βεαῖρ—20 men (hens, women). ὀέας (=2 fives) is used as G. of οεῖς in forming



the numerals 11-19. It has no etymological connection with *deic*. *Céad* (100) is an old neut. o- stem, pl. *céad* (after numerals). Apart from numerals a new pl. *céadta* is used.

**97.**—*Seacht*, *ocht*, *naoi*, *deic* eclipse the initial consonant of the following noun, but *not* that of *the* *genitives* *deas*, *ricead*, etc.—*Seacht mboscaí deas*, 17 boxes ; but *seacht deas*, 17 ; *ocht mbliana caogad*—58 years, but *ocht caogad*—58 ; *naoi n-uaire trío cad*—39 times, but *naoi trío cad*—39. The reason is that in *seacht mboscaí deas*, etc., the 1st numeral is *the limiting word*, whereas in *seacht deas*, *deas* *limits the meaning* of *seacht*, and not *vice versa*. The eclipsis after *seacht*, *naoi*, *deas* is regular, as they ended originally in a nasal (Lat. *septem*, *novem*, *decem*). *Ocht* eclipses analogically. N.B.—*deic cinn*, *deic pearsana*, *deic toibreacha*—10 heads, persons, wells—are heard. The reason is that the final “h” sound of *deic* *unvoices* the consonant resulting from eclipsis, and thus restores the original one. Then *seacht cinn*, etc., follow these analogically.

### Examples of the Cardinals

**98.**—(a) 78 cards :—1—*ocht gcártaí deas is trí fich*. 2—*seacht ndeic a h-ocht de cártaí* (Note this. It is often convenient). 3—*ocht gcártaí seachtmo gad*. (b) 357 books :—1—*seacht leabair deas 7 da cad*, 7 *trí céad* (*leabair*). This is cumbrous. 2—*seacht leabair deas 7 da cad ar trí céad*. 3—*trí céad 7 seacht leabair caogad* (Best). (c) The year 1927 :—*bliain a míle, naoi gcéad*, 7 *seacht fich*. (d) 1927 years :—*míle naoi gcéad 7 seacht mbliana fich*. (e) The 1927th year :—*An seachtmao bliain fich ar naoi gcéad 7 míle*. (f) 275,000 :—1—O.I. way :—*cúig míle seachtmo gad ar da céad*. 2—Modern I.—*da céad 7 cúig míle seachtmo gad*. (g) 200,075 :—1—O.I. way :—*cúig seachtmo gad ar da céad míle*. 2—Modern I.—*da céad míle 7 cúig seachtmo gad*. (h) 75,200 :—*cúig míle seachtmo gad 7 da céad*. (i) £245,666 :—*da céad 7 cúig míle ceatracad, sé céad 7 sé púint seascad*. (l) 5,592,963 acres :—*cúig milliún, cúig céad*, 7 *da míle nó cad*, *naoi gcéad 7 trí h-acraí seascad*,



(m) 7,925,639 stamps :—seáct milliún, naoi gcéad 7 cúig míle pícead, sé céad 7 naoi stampaí tríočad. (n) 6,560,374 books :—sé milliún, cúig céad 7 seasca míle, trí céad 7 ceitre leabair seáctmošad. (o) 4,605,747 tables :—ceitre milliún, cúig míle ar sé céad, seáct gcéad 7 seáct mbúird ceátracád. (p) 17 people :—seáct noume véas. (r) 39 people :—1—naoi noume tríočad. 2—naoi noume véas is píce. 3—naoi noume véas ar pírd. (s) 143,000 men :—céad 7 a trí 7 vacád de míltib fear (b.n. 277).

99.—(a) Trí, ceitre, cúig, sé often aspirate the initial consonant of the following noun, which then often has the sg. form—trí capall, or trí capall—three horses ; cúig milliún, or cúig milliún, 5,000,000. This is due to trí céad, where céad is a true pl. and aspiration is regular. (b) In enumerating persons, from 13 to 19, the sg. noume is used, and v- is aspirated, if not eclipsed. Thus—trí noume véas—13 persons. But—seáct noume véas—17 persons.

### Numeral Substantives

100.—(a) For persons :—Aonar, one person. Táim im' aonar—I am alone. Beirt—two (used in Ulster even of things). Días, díis, two (G.—veise, víse. But días, an ear of corn—G.—véise, D.—véis). Tríúr—three persons (Orig. D.—Old N.—tríar). Ceátrár—four persons. Cúigear—five persons. Seisear—six persons. Mór-seisear—seven persons. Also seáctár. Očtar—eight persons. Naonbár—nine persons. Deicneabár—ten persons. Aon noume véas, aoinne véas—eleven persons ; váréas—twelve persons. Iolar—many persons (Also many things, plurality) ; lánama—a married couple (<láneamain—a perfect pair, G. lánama—but it has passed over to the n- stems—G. -an. The rt. is eamain, twin, L.—geminus. Cf. eamain, Emania.) All these forms, except beirt, díis, aon noume véas, lánama, are compounds, with fear as the 2nd element. They were originally neuter. Tríar=a three of men. But though they contain the M. fear, they are used of women also. Tríúr ban—three women. Tríúr is the old D.



of *TRÍAR*. It ousted the *N.* because of its frequent use in an O.I. idiom (without a prep.). E.g.—*ċánaċar a tríúr*—the three of them came.

(b) **For things** :—*íolár*, many things, plurality. Abstr. *íolraċ*, plural ; *uaċaċ*—singleness. “*Ar uaċaċ spóirt,*” —with scanty amusement ; *deíre*, *tréire*—two things, three things ; *tréaċanas*, “a three days’ fast,” now generally abstinence ; *peíre*, *feíre*—a pair, brace, set (even though more than two), *p. brós*, a pair of shoes : *p. bíorán cníotála*, a set (4) of knitting-needles ; *cúpla*, a couple, twins. Dim.—*cúptín*. Always followed by the *N.* sg. form.

### Special Ways of expressing numbers

**101.**—*Trí caogaċ*—150 ; *trí naonċair*—27 people ; *seáċt ċpíċrí*—7 score ; *tríóċa céaċ*—3,000.

#### 102.

#### The Ordinals

1st	<i>An céaċ (lá)</i>	16th	<i>An seiseaċ (lá) deás</i>
2nd	„ <i>ċara</i>	17th	„ <i>seáċmaċ</i> „ „
3rd	„ <i>tríomáċ</i>	18th	„ <i>ċ-oċtmaċ</i> „ „
4th	„ <i>ceáċramaċ</i>	19th	„ <i>naomáċ</i> „ „
5th	„ <i>cúigeaċ</i>	20th	„ <i>feíceaċ lá</i>
6th	„ <i>seiseaċ</i>	21st	„ <i>ċ-aonmaċ</i> „ <i>feíceaċ</i>
7th	„ <i>seáċmaċ</i>	22nd	„ <i>ċara</i> „ „
8th	„ <i>ċ-oċtmaċ</i>	30th	„ <i>deíċmaċ</i> „ „
9th	„ <i>naomáċ</i>	31st	„ <i>ċ-aonmaċ</i> „ <i>tríóċaċ</i>
10th	„ <i>deíċmaċ</i>	32nd	„ <i>ċara</i> „ „
11th	„ <i>ċ-aonmaċ (lá)</i>	33rd	„ <i>tríomáċ</i> „ „
	<i>deás</i>	40th	„ <i>ceáċraċaċmaċ (lá)</i>
12th	„ <i>ċara</i> „ „	41st	„ <i>ċ-aonmaċ (lá) ceáċraċaċ</i>
13th	„ <i>tríomáċ</i> „ „	42nd	„ <i>ċara</i> „ „
14th	„ <i>ceáċramaċ</i> „ „	43rd	„ <i>tríomáċ</i> „ „
15th	„ <i>cúigeaċ</i> „ „		
	50th <i>An caogaċmaċ (lá)</i>		
	51st „ <i>ċ-aonmaċ (lá) caogaċ</i>		
	52nd „ <i>ċara</i> „ „		
	53rd „ <i>tríomáċ</i> „ „		
	60th „ <i>seascaċmaċ (lá)</i>		
	61st „ <i>ċ-aonmaċ (lá) seascaċ</i>		



62nd	Δη	ῥαρα	(λά	σεασαῶ)
63rd	„	τρίομαῶ	„	„
70th	„	σεαῖτμοῖσῶμαῶ	(λά	
71st	„	τ-δονμαῶ	(λά	σεαῖτμοῖσῶ
72nd	„	ῥαρα	„	„
73rd	„	τρίομαῶ	(λά	σεαῖτμοῖσῶ
80th	„	τ-οῖτμοῖσῶμαῶ	(λά	
81st	„	τ-δονμαῶ	(λά	οῖτμοῖσῶ
82nd	„	ῥαρα	„	„
90th	„	νόῖαῶμαῶ	(λά	
91st	„	τ-δονμαῶ	(λά	νόῖαῶ
92nd	„	ῥαρα	„	„
100th	„	ῑῑαῶμαῶ	(λά	
101st	„	τ-δονμαῶ	(λά	ἄρ ῑῑαῶ
110th	„	ῑῑῑαῶ	„	„
121st	„	τ-δονμαῶ	(λά	ῑῑῑαῶ ἄρ ῑῑαῶ
131st	„	„	„	τριοῖαῶ „
222nd	„	ῥαρα	„	ῑῑῑαῶ „ ῑῑ ῑῑαῶ

103.—(a) Besides τρίομαῶ (3rd), σεῖσεαῶ (6th), ῑῑῑαῶ-ῑῑῑαῶ (30th) we have also τρεῖς, ῑῑμαῶ, τριοῖαῶμαῶ. (b) ῑῑαῶ, 1st, is used in the simple, δονμαῶ in the compound numerals. ῑῑαῶ aspirates the following consonant, because, like δον, it formed a compound. δονμαῶ (like the others in -μαῶ) does *not* aspirate, but (like them) is followed by n- before a vowel, except in the G.—να n-δονμαῶ δοῖσε ῑῑαῶ, of the 11th century.

(b) First, adverbially, is ἄρ ῑῑῑς (ἄρ ῑῑῑ). ῑῑῑῑῑῑ ῑῑ ἄ ῑῑῑτ ἄρ ῑῑῑς—First he learned his lesson ; ῑ ῑῑῑῑ-ῑῑῑ—at once, forthwith ; ῑ ῑῑῑῑῑ—at the beginning of. (c) The Ordinals (from 1st to 10th, as well as 20th, 100th, 1000th) immediately precede the noun, like the Cardinals (the tens, however, together with ῑῑαῶ, ῑῑῑῑ, ῑῑῑῑῑῑ, being *nouns*). (d) “Last” is ῑῑῑῑῑῑῑ, ῑῑῑῑῑῑῑῑ, which *follow* the noun ; or it may be expressed by ῑῑῑῑῑ (G. sg. of ῑῑῑῑῑῑ) ; or, in such expressions as “last Sunday,” special phrases are used. E.g.—ῑῑῑῑ ἄν ῑῑῑῑ ῑῑῑῑῑῑῑ ῑῑῑῑῑῑῑῑῑ—the last is likely to be a sufferer ; λά ῑῑῑῑῑ ἄν ῑῑῑ—the last day of the month ; ῑῑῑ ῑῑῑῑῑῑῑ ῑῑ ῑῑῑ ῑῑῑῑῑῑῑ—last Sunday (adverbial.—See 296). (e) The other day (i.e., a few days ago) is—



an lá fé veireadh, or an lá ceana. (f) “One day” (i.e., on a certain day) is—simply lá—lá dá raib sé ag véanam brós (Séana)—One day as he was making shoes. An lá means “any day”—Táir isteach cúgam don lá is maith leat—Come in to me any day you please. An lá amháin means one day (not two, or three)—Níor cáiteas ann ach don lá amháin—I spent only one day there. Lá áirithe—on a certain day, is stronger than lá alone.

104.—The Ordinals are indeclinable adjectives, used with sg. nouns only. (But see 105). “The first arrivals,” “the first three rows,” etc., must be turned in another way.—b’iad san ba cúisge a táinig—These were the first arrivals. Na h-uimreacha tosaiḡ—The first numbers. Na trí surdeacán tosaiḡ—The three front seats. Tosaiḡ is so used even with a sg. noun—Sroé focal tosaiḡ na tána.—This is the first word of the Táin.

105.—But céad can be used before dá :—An céad dá lá san—Those first two days. Here dá lá is viewed as a unity. Cf. an veic bpúint sin—That £10, where veic bpúint is a *sum* of money, and so takes the sg. article. So we may say—An céad veic bpúint, an dara veic bpúint—The 1st (2nd) *sum* of £10. An dá céad lá san=Those 200 days. Such expressions as “the third seats” (in several rows) are not allowable in I. They must be expressed *distributively* :—ḡac tríomadh surdeacán.

### Fractions

106.— $\frac{1}{2}$ —leat (Neut. o-stem, G. leit). It is used separately, and as a prefix—leat mo rígeadta, the half of my kingdom ; leat-pinginn,  $\frac{1}{2}$ d. ; leat-tuistiún, 2d. (tuistiún, 4d.) ; leat-raol, 3d.  $\frac{1}{3}$ —trian (Neut. o-stem) : dá otrian (note eclipsis),  $\frac{2}{3}$  ;  $\frac{1}{4}$ —ceatramha (F. n-stem). In D. sg. ceatramha (cf. quatrain) it means a line in a four-line stanza, or the stanza itself.  $\frac{1}{5}$ —cúigeadh (Neuter Ordinal used as noun). So the other Ordinals are used with cur, rann, etc., to express other fractions.  $\frac{7}{13}$ —an tríomadh rann déag fé seacht.  $\frac{1}{10}$ —Deacmhadh—also tithe, or tax, in general. Deicmhadh=10th.  $\frac{1}{8}$ —Sémadh cur (leat-trian). In fractions like  $\frac{6}{7}$ ,  $\frac{7}{10}$ , the Ordinal, though



used substantivally, is uninflected :—sé seachtmao ( $\frac{6}{7}$ ), seacht noeachmao ( $\frac{7}{10}$ ), an píceaó curo de—the  $\frac{1}{20}$ . Trí ceathramna ( $\frac{3}{4}$ ).

### Multiplicatives

107.—Donfeacht, once ; dá uair—twice ; a dó pé dó (pé n-a dó)— $2 \times 2$  ; pó trí—thrice (Numeral A). Trí seacht— $7 \times 3$ . Deic bpióro—ten score,  $20 \times 10$ , etc. The o- of dá is aspirated, except after o, n, t, l, s ; or, of course, it may be eclipsed.

### Other Adjectives of Quantity (not Numerals)

108.—(a) Éigin, áiríte.—Bí an tuataí déanta ag dume éigin—Someone had blundered. It is implied that the speaker *did not know* who it was. Éigin is probably the Instrumental case of the noun, éigean, necessity. Áiríte also was a noun (K. uses o'áiríte). Tá neite áiríte gur maic liom tagairt dóib—*I should like to refer to certain things (the speaker, of course, knows them).* Éigin corresponds to L. aliquis, and áiríte to quidam. (b) “Any”—don (in neg. sentences, “no”)—’bpuil don airgead aghat? Have you any money? Níl don ciail aghat—You have no sense. “Anyway”—ar don cuma. In affirmative sentences, pé cuma, pé áit, are also used. Pé cuma is fearr leat—Anyway you prefer. Pé áit is maic leat—Anywhere you like. (c) “Many, many a.”—Is mó dume bí i riocht sparán o’fásáil (Séaona). Many a man was on the point of getting a purse. But “many” is often rendered by nouns, or certain idiomatic expressions. A lán uisge, airgíro, aráin—Much water, money, bread. A definite G. must not follow a lán. Partitive de (with D.) must be used instead. A lán o’uisge na Laoi—Much of the Lee water. Mórán—Is é is dóic le mórán—Many people think ; puinn—(Only in negative, or virtually negative clauses) : Níor scríob sé puinn leabhar—He didn’t write many books ; dá mbeaó puinn daoine 7 eolas acu air—Had there been many (there were not) who knew it. (d) How many ? An ’mó ? Cé méro ? ’Oé méro :—An mó Dia



ann ?—How many Gods are there ? Cé méir fear a bí ann ?—How many men were there ? Dé méir garsún sa scoil iníu ? (e) However many—dá méir (a méir), dá liact (a liact), etc. Dá méir a bí ann ní raib dóctair níos ann—However many were there, there weren't enough. (f) So many—(a) oiread san—bí oiread san acu ann gur cuairt díom a gcómaiream—There were so many there I couldn't count them. (g) As many more—oiread eile—Dá mbead oiread eile acu ann o'féadpáinn iad a cómaiream—Had there been as many more there, I could have counted them. (h) Twice as many as—d dá oiread agus—Tá d dá oiread seirbiseac anois aise 7 a bí aise bliain ó shin—He has twice as many servants now, as he had a year ago. (i) Half as many—leat an oiread—Níl ac leat an oiread seirbiseac anois aise 7 a bí aise—He has only half as many servants now as he had. (j) Too many—an iomad, an iomarca—Tá an iomad camnte agat—You've too much to say. (k) A great many. Besides mórán, a lán, other phrases occur :—ní beag de seo ; ní beag o'iongna ; ní beag o'uaibbas ; is mór an seo ; níl don tseo (don iongna, don uaibbas) ac . . . . (l) As many as—Cóm (líonmar, iomardamail, pairsing, reróseamail) agus (verb following) or le (noun or pronoun following). (m) All—gac, gac don, an uile, gac uile—an uile duine—every one. Not always expressed by adjectives :—a raib o'airgead ann—all the money there was. As prefix, -uile (iol, oll)—uile-cómactac, almighty ; ollscoil, iolscoil—University. (n) Other, another, others—eile ; nac (é, í, iad) ; fé deire, ceana :—An lá fé deire—the other day ; daoine nac é (í, iad)—other people. (o) One after another—1 nriaró céile ; 'na gceann is 'na gceann (of things), 'na nriune is 'na nriune (of persons) ; fá seac. (p) Each other, one another—a céile. (q). More.—Besides the comparative mó, one uses also tuille, breis (nouns) ; tar, seacas (prepositions) ; Any more than—ac oiread agus (before verb), ac oiread le (before noun or pronoun) ; ac cóm beag agus (or le) ; ac fé mar. . . . Once more—arís ; don uair amáin eile ; the prefix at, ait,—do dem sé é at-aitris—he told it once more. More power to you—Conac sanort ; a conac san ort.



## Pronominal Adjectives

109.—These are derived from, or partake of the function of, pronouns. They are :—(a) The Article (See 1-7.) (b) Possessive Adjectives. (c) Demonstrative Adjectives. (d) Interrogative Adjectives. The article, being formed from the two pronominal elements, “sin” and “to, ta,” belongs to this class. (b) The Possessive Adjectives are :—

<i>Sg.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
1. mo' . . . . -sa (-se)	ár <sup>n</sup> . . . . -na (-ne)
2. do' . . . . -sa (-se)	ðár <sup>n</sup> . . . . -sa (-se)
3. M. Neut. á' . . . . san (sín)	á <sup>n</sup> . . . . -san(sín)
F. á . . . . san (sín)	

These are *the emphatic forms*, which alone should be given in a paradigm. When the English *my*, *thy*, etc., are given in a list, they mean, of course, *my*, *thy* (contrasting the persons). The Irish for *my*, *thy*, etc., is *not*, and *could not be*, mo, do, etc., but as given above. When there is no emphasis, drop the particles. Examples :—  
Mo tíg, *my house* : mo tíg-se (mo teac-sa)—*my house* ;  
A gcainnt breag—their *fine talk* : A gcainnt breag san—their *fine talk*.

(c) The Demonstrative Adjectives are :—1. So, seo. 2. úo. 3. san, sín. They follow the noun, or noun+adjective or adjectives, immediately, and the noun is generally preceded by the article. But proper nouns, especially if the demonstrative is followed by a gcainn-ne (a gcainn-se, acu san) may dispense with it.—Séadna so a gcainn-ne—This Séadna of ours. Also, in Dia máirt seo cúgaimn, etc., there is no article. So (seo) is the demonstrative of the 1st person, úo that of the second, and san (sín) that of the third. Seo and sín are used after a *slender* vowel or consonant.

(d) Interrogative Adjectives :—Cíad, and ca are often adjectival :—Cíonnus (cíad ionnus), how ; c'áit (U.) where ; ca n-uair (U.), when ; canad (ca ionad) where ; cíad 'cu (followed by noun) which ; cíad méir—how many, how much ; céad, créad, what ? Cíonnus (conus) 'táoi ? How are you ? (An “is” not a “tá” sentence,



as the principal verb is "is"). Expanded it is—C1Δ ionnus Δn ionnus Δ τΔ01? What way (is) the way in which you are? Cf. the Conn. C1Δ εΔ01 Δ 0puil tú? C'Δ1τ Δ (1) RΔ10 (RΔ0) sé (U)? Where was he? 0'mt15 sé—ní p10s 0om canΔ0—He went—I know not where. C1Δ'cu ceann Δb' fearr 1eΔτ? Which one would you prefer? Equivalent to—C1Δ ceann Δcu (Δn ceann) Δb' fearr 1eΔτ? In the expressions C1Δ n-é (í, 1Δ0), CΔ0 é (í, 1Δ0), c1Δ and cΔ0 are *pronouns*.



## CHAPTER IV.

### PRONOUNS.

110.—Pronouns are either—(a) Personal. (b) Demonstrative. (c) Interrogative. (d) Indefinite. (e) Reflexive. (f) Relative.

The Personal Pronouns are :—

<i>Sg.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
1. mise	Sinn-ne (Simne)
2. túsa	Sib-se
3. M.—Eisean (Seisean)	1aó-san (S1aó san)
F.—ise (Sise)	All genders.
Neut.—eaó ón (eaóon).	

These are the emphatic forms (See 109). When unemphatic the 1st sg. is mé, 2nd tú, 3rd M. é (sé), F. í (sí), Neut. eaó. In the pl. drop the emphatic particles. É, í, 1aó (and their emphatic forms) are used :—1° As subjects or predicates to the vb. is :—*Is é Séadna a bí ann*—It was S. who was there (I. é *predicate*, Eng. *it subject*, each proleptic). 2° Disjunctively, i.e., unattached, either as subj. or pred. to a verb :—*Bí sé ann, 7 é ar dearg-buile*—There he was, stark mad. 3° As object of a transitive verb (autonomous or otherwise) ; as subject of a passive verb ; or A. governed by certain prepositions :—*buail é*, strike him ; *póspár í*—someone will marry her ; *creaófar 1aó*—they will be robbed ; *roir é 7 í*—between him and her. 4° Absolutely (See 195) :—*Tá a fíois agam í beic i ngráó leis*—I know she's in love with him.

Seisean, sise, s1aó-san (and their unemphatic forms) are used conjunctively as subjects to any verb other than is :—*Tá sé ar buile*—He's mad ; *Táro s1aó san ar don aigne liomsa*—They agree with me.

The neut. emphatic particle (in 3rd sg.) appears only in eaóon, O.I. ed ón, ie. (viz., namely). It means



“it (is) it.” With the copula *ón* or *són* was used where we now say *san*.—*ba dochu leom són* (Quoted by *Thurn*. 241).

### The Suffixed Pronouns

111.—A.—The so-called prepositional pronouns are examples of personal pronouns suffixed (in D. or A.) to prepositions. B. Genitive pronouns suffixed to prepositions. C. Suffixed—*o* in verbs.

#### A.—Prepositional Pronouns

##### Old Datives

##### 112.—

(a) *oo*, to, for, etc.

(b) *oe*, from, off, etc.

*Sg.*

*Pl.*

*Sg.*

*Pl.*

1. *oóm-sa*

*oúinn-ne*

*oíom-sa*

*oínn-ne*

2. *ouit-se*

*oaoib-se*

*oíot-sa*

*oib-se*

3. M.Neut. *oó-san*

*oóib-sin*

*oe sin*

*oíob-san*

F. *oi-se*

*oíse*

(c) *Ó*, from, through, etc.

(d) *Δ* (*as*), out of.

1. *uaim-se*

*uainn-ne*

*asam-sa*

*asainn-ne*

2. *uait-se*

*uaidb-se*

*asat-sa*

*asaidb-se*

3. M.Neut. *uaid sin*

*uata san*

*as san*

*asta san*

F. *uaithe sin (-se)*

*aiste sin*

(e) *Roim*, before (O.I. *re*)

(f) *Δs*, at, etc.

1. *róim-sa*

*róiminn-ne*

*asam-sa*

*asainn-ne*

2. *róimat-sa*

*rómaidb-se*

*asat-sa*

*asaidb-se*

3. M.Neut. *roime sin*

*rómpa-san*

*aíge sin*

*aca-san*

F. *roimpí sin*

*aíce sin*

##### 113.—

##### Old Accusatives.

(g) *le*, with, etc.

(h) *tré*, through

1. *liom-sa*

*linn-ne*

*tríom-sa*

*trínn-ne*

2. *leat-sa*

*lib-se*

*tríot-sa*

*tríib-se*

3. *leis-sin*

*leo-san*

*tríó sin*

*tríota-san*

F. *léití-sin (léi)*

*tríte sin*



(i) So, to (O.I. co)

(l) um, about, around,  
etc.

1. cúgam-sa	cúgaínn-ne	umam-sa	umainn-ne
2. cúgat-sa	cúgaib-se	umat-sa	umuib-se
3. cuige sin	cúca-san	uime sin	úmpa san
F. cúicé sin		uimpí sin	

(m) ior, between, etc.

(n) Tar, beyond, past,  
etc.

1. eadram-sa	eadraínn-ne	tarraim-sa	tarraínn-ne
2. eadrat-sa	eadraib-se	tarra-sa	tarraib-se
3. ior é	eadorta san	tarraí sin	tarraí, tarraí, tarraí,
F. ior í		tarraí, tarraí sin	san

## 114. Either Dative or Accusative.

(o) in, in, into

(p) ar, because of, on, into,  
etc.

1. ionnam-sa	ionnaínn-ne	orm-sa	orainn-ne
2. ionnat-sa	ionnaib-se	ort-sa	oraib-se
3. ann san	ionnta-san	aí sin	orta-san
F. inntí sin		uirctí sin	

(r) fé (fó, fá, faoi), under, etc.

Sg.—1. fúm-sa	Pl.—1. fúinn-ne
2. fút-sa	2. fuuib-se
3. fé sin (faoi sin). M. Neut.	3. fuca san.
F. fúicé sin.	

## 115.—Besides these we have :—

(a) Occasionally—Seac, besides (A).—Seacam-sa, seacat-sa, seac é, seac í. Pl.—Seacainn-ne, seacuib-se, seaca san. Instead of seac é, í, seaca san, we now use seacas é, í, iad san. (b) Isolated forms :—1. Céana, now an adv.=already, is a prep. pron. from O.I. cen (our san)=without it. 2. Riam, now an adv.=ever before, is prep. pron. 3 sg. M. and Neut. from re, before. 3. In riut (as síor-séiríeas riut—"Éamonn an Cnuic,") we have 2 sg. form from the prep. fri, against (O.I. frit, friut). Riut also occurs as 2 sg. from re, before.



4. The Conn. *preisin* seems to be the O.I. *friss sin*, influenced by *leis sin*. 5. K. has *uΔistɪ* (3 sg. F.) from *ós* (K.P. 79).

### 116.— Notes on the Prepositional Pronouns.

(a) *Cúgam-sa*, etc., though formed from the O.I. prep. *co* (50) reduplicated, are now associated with the later prep. *cum*. That is, they are used wherever *cum* would be used with nouns. E.g.—*cum na caṭraḥ*—to the city; *cúca san*—to them. The reduplication may be due to the influence of *Δgam-sa Δḡat-sa* (*Thurn.*). (b) *fo*, now *fo* (Conn. *ḡaoi*, U. *ḡá*, M. *ḡé*). *ḡaoi* may be due to O.I. 3 sg. A. *foi*; and *ḡé* may be due to the M. pronunciation of *-aoi* in certain words, e.g., *caoí*. *ḡúitɪ* seems to be formed on the analogy of *cúicɪ*, *uΔite* (the later O.I. form was *foae*). (c) *Ann*, orig. D. while *inntɪ* (O.I. *inte*) was A. The A.M. and D.F. forms are lost. In *ionnta* (O.I. *intiu*) the pron. is A., the D. (O.I. *inuib*) having become obsolete, because it was the same in form as the 2 pl. (our *ionnaib*). (d) In *orta*, *leo*, *leobta* (analogical), *tríota*, *eatorta*, *iompa*, *cúca*, *társa*, the pron. is A., as the preps. *le*, *tré*, *roir*, *un*, *co*, *tar* governed only an A., while *ar* (though it governed both cases with *nouns*) was compounded only with A. *pronouns*. (e) *Δcu*, *Δsta*, *uΔta*, *rómpa* are formed after these models (o), replacing the forms in *-ib*—O.I. *occaib*, *eissib*, *uadaib*, *remib*—where the prons. were of course D., as these prepositions governed only the D. (f) In *roib*, *roib*, we have regular D. forms, except that the final *-b* of *roib* has been broadened, to prevent confusion with the 2 pl. *díb*. (g) In 2 sg. a slender *-t* seems to have been regular in D. so that *roiot*, *Δsat*, *Δḡat*, *rómat* are irregular. A. forms show broad *-t*—*leat*, *umat*, *tríot*, *cúḡat*, *tart*, *ionnat*. *ort*, *ḡut*, *seacav*. (h) In 3 sg. M. and Neut. the A. pronoun in O.I. appeared as :—1° a slender vowel, after preps. which originally ended in a vowel—*ḡé*, *ume*, *cúige*, *ceana* (O.I. *cene*). 2° After preps. which originally ended in a consonant, the vowel is lost, but the final consonant is slender—*leis*, *trío*, *Δmlaib*, *tairis*. *Δir* was in O.I. regular, *airi*; the mod. *Δir* is irregular, modelled on O.I. *foir*, *fair*. *Ann*, as we have already



seen, is D. (i) The 3 sg. A.F. in O.I. ended in *-e* (now mostly *-i*, because of the pron. *i*)—*innɿɿ*, *uimpɿ*, *čūɿɿ*. (j) The 3 sg. D.M. shows either a final broad consonant, or broad vowel—*ann*, *riam*, *as*, *oó*. *Δige* (O.I. *occo*) is modelled on *cuige* (A). *uaro* (O.I. *uao*) may be influenced by *uam*, *uat*.

### B.—Genitive Pronouns suffixed to Prepositions.

117.—Instead of the full forms of the G. pronouns certain prepositions usually have shorter suffixed forms. These prepositions are :—*Δε*, *ó*, *m*, *oo*, *oe*, *fé* *le* :—*Δgam' mátaɿɿ*—at my mother ; *am' tɿɿ-se*—at *my* house ; *oubaɿɿɿ sé suas lem' beaɿ*—he said up to my face ; *ta sé sé míle óm tɿɿ-se go oti oo tɿɿ-se*—it's six miles from my house to yours ; *oom lom oeɿɿo amoeona*—entirely against my will ; *oo baɿeao oem' bonnaib mé*—I was taken off my feet. 2nd sg. *Δgo' mátaɿɿ*—at your mother ; *o' tɿɿ-se*, in *your* house ; *let' ataɿɿ*—with your father. So—*oo'o*, *oot'*—to your ; *oeo'*, *oet'*, of or from your ; *feo'*, *fa'o'*—under your ; *o'o'*, *ot'*—from your. . . . With a (3 sg. M.F.) and a (3 pl.) we have—*Δga* (*g* slender), *o'a* ; after *ó*, *le*, *fé* (owing to *m* and other eclipsing preps.) *ó n-a*, *le n-a*, *fé n-a*. In 1 pl. and 2 pl. the G. pronouns are never shortened.

### C.—Suffixed *-o* in Verbs.

118.—In 1 pl. pres. Ind. Act. and Fut. Ind. Act. final *-o* is a neuter pronoun :—*oeanpamio*, *surómio*, *lit.*—we shall do it, we pray for *it*. So final *-o* in 1 sg. Fut. Ind. Act., and 1 sg. Pres. Subj. Act. :—*raḡao*, *beao*.

### Demonstrative Pronouns

119.—These are :—1. *Seo*, *so*. 2. *Siúo*, *súo*. 3. *Sm*, *san*. Strengthened forms—*é seo*, *é siúo*, *é sm* (*i seo*, *ia so*, etc.). The simple forms are uninflected for gender, number and case. The strengthened forms indicate gender and number, and of course the prep. pronouns, when followed by the demonstratives, *do not* cease to convey distinctions in gender, number and case.



120.—The Demonstratives may be :—1° Subj. of the verb *is*, or other verb :—*Is fearr so ná súo*—This is better than that. *Ní maíť liom san : ní taitneann san liom*—I don't like that. 2° Predicate to verb *is* (when not following immediately)—*Sé deirimse leat ná so*—This is what I tell you. *Sé teastuig uairó ná súo*—What he wanted was what I told you. When they follow *is* immediately they are strengthened by *é, í, iao* :—*'Sí síúo a bí uairó*—It was “that one” he wanted. 3° Object of transitive verb (Autonomous or otherwise)—*Tarraing seo, buail sin*—Pull this, strike that (Rhyme). 4° Used *absolutely* :—*Bí a luict cómaíle şá áiteam uirtí san a déanam*—Her advisers urged her to do that. 5° Governed by prep. :—*As san*—out of that; *oar so 7 súo*—by all the oaths. 6° Virtual N.—*Beaó náire orm san do déanam*—I should be ashamed to do that (See 169).

### Interrogative Pronouns

121.—*Cia* (M.F.), *cé* (M.F.) ; *cia n-*, *cé n-* (before *é, í, iao*) ; *caó* (Neut.). *Cá*, whence (*ca+an*—the same *an* as we have *prefixed* in *an-uas*, etc. (See 157B),—is the only mod. I. ex. of an interrogative pron. governed by a prep. Otherwise *cia*, *caó*, *ca* (and compounds) are always pred. N. to vb. *is* (understood). The U. forms—*şoroé, şoroí, şoroiao*, seem to reflect O.I. *cote, coteet*—cate in *fhírinne*—in what consisteth righteousness ?

### Interrogative Particles

122.—Direct and indirect *single* questions, not introduced by interrogative pronouns, or adjectives, prefix the particles *an*, *ar*.—*An raóais ar scoil inóé?*—Were you at school yesterday? *O'fíafuig sé óiom an raóas ar scoil inóé*—He asked me if I was at school yesterday. *Negative* questions are introduced by *ná* (in Munster, except with “*is*”) ; *nac*, outside Munster, with all verbs ; in Munster, also with the present tense of *is* ; *nár* everywhere, in the past tense, except with those verbs to which *ro* is attached, and certain others which dispense with *ro*- altogether. *nár* (like *ar*) is used also



with the Conditional of *is* (expressed or understood).  
*Ná fuil sé annso?*—Isn't he here? *Ná c fearra duit é?*  
 Isn't it better for you? *Ná c bfuil sé côm maic agat?*  
 (outside Munster)—May you not as well. . . .? But  
*Ná rabais ann?*—Weren't you there? *Ná feacaís é?*—  
 Didn't you see him?

**123.**—*Double* questions are put by means of *cia'cu*, with a direct relative form in the first member, and *nó ná* (*nac*, *nár*) in the second member, when it is negative. (For explanation, see **214 II.**). *Is deacair a ráo cia'cu (a) cuaró sé ann nó nár cuaró (deágaró)*—It is hard to say whether he went or not. The disjunction implied in “whether . . . or” may be expressed in other ways :—1° (Without *cia'cu*) :—*Ar fan sé ann, nó an amtaró a cuaró sé a baile*—Did he stay or go home? 2° The 2nd alternative is put in the verb n. form, with ellipsis of the auxiliary verb *dein* (see **286**).—*Ar fan sé ann, nó dul a baile?*

### Indefinite Pronouns

**124.**—(a) *Các*, everyone :—*ta fíos ag các*—everyone knows. (b) *doimne* (*doimneac*)—anyone (with neg.—none): *gac doimne*, everyone. (c) *ceactar*—originally “each of two,” now “one or other of two”; with neg. “neither,” “not any” (of more than two). (d) *-neac*—someone, anyone. Nearly obsolete, but we have it in *doimneac*, and in the comparative form *neactar*. (e) The neut. *ní*, anything, had something to do with the development of the noun *níò*, a thing. In L.B. we find a pl. *nechi*, mod. *neite*. In *níò.*, the *ó* is merely a re-echo of *é* (for earlier *ch*) in *neite*. The pl. spelling *níote* is a reconstruction from *níò*. (e) *neactar*. Originally, “one of two.” Common now in the phrase—*nó neactar acu*=or else. Both *ceactar* and *neactar* were probably neuter nouns originally, like *oirtcar*, *iarctar* *ceanntar*, *alltar*, etc.

The adjectival form of *các* is *gac*. The slender *c-* in *ceactar* is due to *neactar*. The *g-* of *gac* is often slender also, especially in :—*gac 're searó*. *Don* is sometimes



used pronominally. *Don naomta Dé* (C.S. Mark, I, 24)—The Holy One of God. *Don dem' cáirde sròe* (TBC)—one of my "supernatural" friends. *Don ba mó ná é féin* (CMD. 394)—One greater than he. *D'innis Eoin cérb é an t-Don san* (CMD. 394),—John told who this One was.

### Reflexive Pronouns

**125.**—Added to the personal pronouns, *féin* makes them reflexive :—*do gortuig sé é féin*—he hurt himself. *Caoin tu féin a dhúine boict* (KP.)—weep for thyself wretched man. *Grádh do dhúine féin*—self-love. Besides the reflexive meaning, *féin* has others :—(a) Own—*mo leabhar féin*—my own book ; *tu féin fé n-óear é*—the responsibility is all your own. (b) Even—*an méiró sin féin*—even that. *Cuir i gcás féin*—even supposing. *féin* contains a part of the verb *is*, and *é sin*, but is now used of all three persons, both numbers, and all genders. It is an example of *the generalisation of a single form*. Cf. the nominal phrase *a céite*, used to mean, each other, one another.

### Relative Pronouns

**126.**—Direct relatives are, normally, those used in N. and A. But after prepositions which govern the A., the forms 5° below are used. Oblique relatives are those used for G. and D. (including Abl., Loc. and Instr.). The modern relatives are :—A.—Direct :—1° *a'*, 2° *do'*, 3° *a' o'*, 4° '(particle omitted). B.—Oblique :—5° *an*, *ar'*, 6° *son*, *sur'*, 7° *na*, *n-ar'*. C.—Negative :—8° *ná*, in Munster (outside past tense) with verbs other than *is*. 9° *nac*, outside Munster, with all verbs (except past tense) ; and in Munster with *is* (in present tense). 10° *nár'* in past tense ; and in the conditional of *is*. D.—Compound :—11° *an* (outside past tense) ; *ar'*, in past tense ; and conditional of *is* ; and, without aspiration, in present tense of *is*. Examples :—

1° *a'*—*An bean cos-noctaithe is i a b'í ann* (S.)—It was none other than the barefooted woman. 2° *do'*, *o'*—*Sròe an té do dháró ann*—this is he who went. *Tá 'fios*



aḡ luēt na n-ionnarba cao v'oireann doib (T.B.C. 247)—  
 The exiles know what (it is that) suits them. 3° a v'—  
 nuair a v'éirig iósep as a coibla do dem sé mar a  
 v'órdúig ainḡeal an tigearna vó (C.S. 3)—And Joseph,  
 rising up from sleep, did as the Angel of the Lord had  
 commanded him. 4° (Particle understood). Sin é mull  
 mé (S.)—that's what ruined me. Cao é an tairbe féadfao  
 sé a véanam duit? What good could he do you? 5° an,  
 ar' (ar', in past tense; also in present (without aspira-  
 tion), and conditional, of is):—Cé'r vóib mé, nó cé 'mb'  
 as mé (N.nḡ.6)—Who I was, or whence I was. An curac  
 a cur a baile aḡ an bfeair a mbu leis i (Ibid. 21)—to send  
 the curragh home to its owner. (Note, in these exx.  
 from Conn. I., that an sometimes does *not* combine with  
 ro in the past tense. The same is true of go occasionally  
 in Munster I.—an munnair go mba leo é (Cmḡ. 377)—  
 the owners of it). Sul a raib v'uam aise filleao—before  
 he had time to return (Here ro- combines with the verb).  
 Is mairḡ do'n fear san tré n-a vóeafar mac an Dume  
 do vóil (C.S. 75)—Woe to him through whom the Son  
 of Man shall be betrayed (Rel. A. governed by tré).  
 6° son, sur' (sur' in past tense; and also in pres. (without  
 aspiration) and conditional of is). An té leis sur cúmanḡ  
 fāḡao (Proverb)—If you haven't room enough you can  
 leave! An té surbé a vóia a vobḡ—he whose God is  
 his belly. 7° n-an, nar' (n-ar' in past tense; and also  
 in present (without aspiration) and conditional of is):—  
 An té n-arb' é a vóia a vobḡ—he whose God is his belly.  
 'Sé vubairt ḡac flait n-ar mait leis triall (Song)—Every  
 chief that wished to go (to fight) said. 8°, 9°, 10°—ná,  
 nac, nár:—Ruḡ éigim nár v'féoir a v'fāḡail—something  
 that could not be got. An té ná fuil láoir ní fuláir vó  
 veit ḡlic (Proverb)—If you're not strong, you need  
 cunning. An té nac truaḡ leis do cás, ná dem do ḡearán  
 leis (Proverb)—Don't look for sympathy from the  
 unsympathetic. 11° The Compound Relative—an, ar':—  
 v'fāḡ sé an ḡleann 's a raib ann aḡam—He gave me  
*carte blanche* (Lit.—He left me the glen, and all that  
 was in it). Vo cáiteas ar tuilleas—I spent all I earned.  
 N.B.—The relatives 8°, 9°, 10°. 11°, have no distinctive  
 forms for direct and oblique uses.



Development of *go*, *sur*; *n-a*, *n-ar*; *oo*; *a'*.

**127.**—*go*, *sur*.—Developed from—1° *a<sub>5</sub> a—An ní ó bfuil saeóeal Glas, is tearc sa bfuil a seanás* (K.H. II, 18)—Few people know the history of the name G.G. (*sa=a<sub>5</sub> a*, passing easily to *go*). 2° The **conjunction** *go*—*Cao é mar dúine é seo, go sma<sup>ct</sup>ui<sup>ge</sup>ann sé saot<sup>t</sup> 7 fairr<sup>ge</sup>, 7 go ndeim<sup>ro</sup> siad ru<sup>o</sup> air?* (Luke, viii, 25)—Who is this that He commandeth the winds and the sea, and they obey Him? The 1st *go* is clearly conjunctive. The 2nd one easily develops the relative meaning—“Who is this *whom* winds and sea obey”? 3° The contrast between *ná* and *go* as *conjunctions* facilitates the use of *go* as an *affirmative* relative, corresponding to the *negative* relative *ná*. By a sort of *proportional analogy*, we get—Con. *ná* : conj. *go* : : Rel. *ná* : **Rel. go**—*Neite beas<sup>a</sup> jnár cuir sé blúire suime ionnta nuair a conn<sup>a</sup>ic sé ar t<sup>u</sup>is iad, ac sur cuir sé mórán suime anois ionnta* (N. 168)—Trifles to which he paid no attention whatever when he first saw them, but to which he paid great attention now.

*n-a*, *n-ar* :—1° From preps. which ended in a nasal (and others which imitated them) we get, with oblique rel. *a*, the form *n-a* (*n-ar*). E.g.—*i n-a* (in which), *go n-a* (with which), *ria n-a* (before whom), and, in imitation of these, *ó n-a* (from which), *tré n-a*, *le n-a*. *n-a* was then isolated, and used as an oblique relative, even when such preps. did not precede it. 2° From accidental occurrences like—*an bean n-a bfuil an t-éadóac corcra uirt<sup>i</sup>*—where the final *-n* of *bean* might have been carried to *a*, changing it into *n-a*. Cf. the *liaison* in Fr. *vous avez*, etc., and a like phenomenon with rel. *oo*.

*oo*.—1°—From confusion with prep. *oo* in compound verbs like *oo-geibim*, *oo-cuair*. These, when non-relative, are often used without *oo*, which then assumes the function of a relative. 2° *oo* *beir* in O.I. (with unaspirated *b-*), but *intí do beir* (*b*-asp.)—he who gives. In mod. I. *oo* *beir*, where *o* is always aspirated, the aspiration cannot mark relativity, which is therefore assigned to *oo*—*an té oo beir*. 3° From fortuitous occurrences like—*tá 'fios a<sub>5</sub> lu<sup>ct</sup> na h-ionnarda cao o'oireann oóib*.



Δ'.—In verbs like ΔΤΑ, ΔΘΕΙΡ, ΔΟΥΒΑΙΡΤ, initial Δ- contains the remains of a prep. which was kept, in later I., only in rel. sentences, so that gradually it came to be looked on as the relative element. ΔΡ η-ΔΤΑΙΡ ΔΤΑ ΔΡ ηεαμ—Our Father who art in heaven. The form Δ' ϑ' is merely a reduplicated form of ϑο. The prep. ϑο often becomes Δ, and before certain words beginning with a vowel, or ϣ takes the double form Δ ϑ (this happens in Scottish Gaelic also). **Relative ϑο**, side by side with relative Δ, has been similarly treated.

N.B.—The direct relative Δ does *not* aspirate :—  
 (a) βα, the past and conditional of IS. Δη τέ Δ β'φεαρη—he who was best ; β'σμ ε Δ β'φεαρη—that's what would have been best. (b) Autonomous forms (in many places). Τρέις Δ τuiστεαρη γαό βεαρη (Proverb)—it is afterwards a deed is appreciated. This holds even when the *meaning* is oblique (as in last ex.). It holds also of ϑο—Δη ρυϑ ϑο ϑεμεαϑ, that which was done. (c) The τ- of τΑ and the ϑ- of ϑΕΙΡ, ϑΟΥΒΑΙΡΤ, etc.—Νί μέ ΔουβΑΙΡΤ Δη εαηνητ σμ—It wasn't I who said that.

Note also, that ΔΡ, η-ΔΡ, γυρ never aspirate the β of the present tense of IS :—πέ ϑυμε λε η-ΔΡβ ΔΙΤ ε—Whoever thinks it queer. Δη τέ η-ΔΡβέ Δ Όια Δ βολγ.



## CHAPTER V.

### THE VERB.

**128.—A.—Simple Verbs :—**These are subdivided into  
 (a) Root Verbs—*molaim*, I praise, *buaílim*, I strike.  
 (b) Denominative verbs, in *-uig*, *-ig*, from nouns and adjectives—*árouigim* ; *istigim*, I lower ; and disyllabic verbs in *-il*, *-in*, *-ir*, *-is*, *-ins*. The verbs in Class (a) are First Conjugation ; those in Class (b) Second Conjugation. N.B.—Verbs like *tiomáim*, with long 2nd syllable belong to 1st Conjugation. Fut. *tiomáimpeao*.

**B.—Compound Verbs (135-153).**

### 129.— A.—SIMPLE VERBS.

(a) Root verbs, *molaim*, *buaílim* (First Conjugation).

#### Active Voice. Indicative Mood.

##### Present Tense.

Sg.	Pl.
1. <i>molaim-se</i> , <i>buaílim-se</i>	<i>molaimíó-ne</i> , <i>buaílimíó-ne</i> .
2. <i>—áir-se</i> , <i>—ir-se</i>	<i>molann síbse</i> , <i>—eann síbse</i> .
3. <i>—ann seisean (sise)</i> <i>buaileann seisean (sise)</i> .	<i>—air síad-san</i> , <i>—í síad-san</i> .

##### Imperfect.

1. <i>’o molaimn-se</i> , <i>’o buaílimn-se</i>	<i>’o molaimís-ne</i> , <i>’o buaílimís-ne</i>
2. „ <i>—tá-sa</i> , „ <i>—teá-sa</i>	„ <i>—ad síbse</i> , „ <i>—ead síbse</i>
3. „ <i>—ad seisean (sise)</i> „ <i>buailead</i> „ „	„ <i>—airís sin</i> , „ <i>—íris sin</i>

##### Past.

1. <i>’o molas-sa</i> , <i>’o buaileas-sa</i>	<i>’o molamair-ne</i> , <i>’o buaileamair-ne</i>
2. „ <i>—ais-se</i> , „ <i>—is-se</i>	„ <i>—abair-se</i> , „ <i>—eabair-se</i> .
3. „ <i>mol</i> , <i>’o buail seisean</i> <i>(sise)</i> .	„ <i>—adar san</i> , „ <i>—eadar san</i> .



## Future.

Sg.

Pl.

- |                                      |                              |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. molpao-sa, buailpeao-sa.          | molpaimio-ne, buailpimio-ne  |
| 2. —paoir-se, —paoir-se              | —paoir sibse, —paoir sibse   |
| 3. —paoir, buailpaoir seisean (sise) | —paoir siadon, —paoir siadon |

## Conditional (Secondary Future).

- |                                   |                                    |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| 1. do molpaim-se, do buailpaim-se | do molpaimis-ne, do buailpaimis-ne |
| 2. „ —paoir-sa, „ —paoir-sa       | „ molpaoir sibse, „ —paoir sibse   |
| 3. „ —paoir seisean, „ —paoir     | „ —paoir is sin, „ —paoir is sin   |
- sise.

## Imperative Mood.

- |                              |               |                |
|------------------------------|---------------|----------------|
| 1. molaim-se, buailim-se     | molaimis-ne   | } buailimis-ne |
|                              | molaim-na     |                |
| 2. mol-sa, buail-se          | molaoir-se,   | —buailaoir-se  |
| 3. molaor, buailaoir seisean | —aoir is sin, | —aoir is sin   |

## Subjunctive Mood.

## Present.

- |                                    |                            |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1. molaor-sa, buailaoir-sa         | molaimio-ne, buailimio-ne  |
| 2. —aoir-se, —aoir-se              | —aoir sibse, —aoir sibse   |
| 3. —aoir, buailaoir seisean (sise) | —aoir siadon, —aoir siadon |

## Past.

(Same in form as Imperfect Indicative).

## Passive and Autonomous.

- 1° Pres. Indic.—moltar, buailtear. Moltar é (Pass.)  
he is praised (é N.) Aut.—Someone praises him  
(é A).
- 2° Past Indic.—do molaor, do buailaoir (Init. consonant  
unaspirated).
- 3° Impft. Indic.—do moltaí (moltaí, moltaoi), do  
buailtaí.
- 4° Fut. Indic.—molpar, buailpar (p. broad, at least  
in many parts of Munster).
- 5° Conditional.—(do) molpaí (molpaoi), (do) buailpaí.
- 6° Imperative.—moltar, buailtear.
- 7° Subjunctive.—Pres.—moltar, buailtear. Past.—  
moltaí (moltaoi), buailtaí.



## 130.—

## Subsidiary Forms.

The above paradigms (where three persons are given) show, of course, the emphatic forms (109). When unemphatic, drop the particles. The meaning, in some of the tenses, is *habitual*, and, in all, *absolute*; and there is direct reference to the *action*, not a *state* previous or subsequent to the action.

Verbs, however, like *deirim*, I say, *creirim*, I believe, *measaim*, I think, *sámluigim*, I fancy (2nd conjug.), *cloisim*, I hear, *cím*, I see, *tuigim*, I understand, may convey either the *actual* or the *habitual* meaning. In other verbs, the meaning may be, instead of *absolute*, *progressive* and *contemporaneous*; there may be reference, not to the *action*, but to a *state*. Hence the above paradigms must be supplemented:—

Pres. Indic.—A.—Direct reference to *action*:—(a) Contemporaneous (Habitual): 1° Active:—*bíonn sé am' molaó 7 é i láthair na mac-léiginn*—He keeps praising me, when he is with the students. 2° Passive:—*bíonn sé dá molaó acu an fáil a b'í ann*—He is being praised by them all the time they are there. 3° Auton.:—*bítear am' molaó*—Someone keeps praising me.

(b) Actual:—1° Active:—*tá sé am' molaó anois*—He is praising me now. 2° Passive:—*táim dom' molaó aige*—I am being praised by him. 3° Auton.:—*tátar am' molaó (am' bualaó)*—Someone is praising (striking) me.

B.—Direct reference to *state*:—(a) Habitual:—*bíonn an coirce buailte aige nuair a sroisim-se an sgioból*—He has the oats threshed when I reach the barn (Subsequent state). (b) Actual:—*tá an cruicneacht buailte aige céana*—He has already threshed the wheat (Subsequent state). Similar distinctions occur in all the moods and tenses.

## 131.—Notes on the Moods and Tenses:—

1° The ending *-ann*, *-eann*, of 3 sg. pres. Indic. first appears in the prototonic forms of certain compound verbs, whence it spread gradually. O.I. *as-ren*, pays out, neg.—*ní érenn*. It was not, therefore, originally,



a personal ending at all, as -renn is the vb. root, re(n), present stem, with -n doubled.

2° The 3rd sg. rel. ending is -as, -eas. Used as 3 pl. as well, but rarely at all in Munster. The pl. forms are obsolete.

3° In 1 pl. -aimíó, -míó, had final í short, and had no -ó.

4° The Impft. (when no other particle is used) is generally preceded by ro, which aspirates the *active* forms. In final syllable of 1 and 3 pl. í has been lengthened. (Due to assimilation in dissyllabic forms with í in penult,—ro bímís ?)

5° The ending -aó, eaó, in the finite vb., except in Pass. and Auton., is pronounced -ac, -eac. In Pass and Auton.= -as (u5), -ac, -av, according to the district. In the vb. n. the -ó is silent in Munster.

6° In Past. Auton. and Pass. ro- prefixes n- to initial vowel, to distinguish from Act. forms—o'áirígeaó Seán, —S. used to hear. But—ro n-áirígeaó S.—S. was heard.

7° In the past tense the particle ro generally combines with certain other particles :—an (interrog.), ní (not), ná (conj. or neg. rel.), a (obl. rel.), so (conj. or obl. rel.), n-a (obl. rel.), muna (unless), cá (where ?), giving instead :—ar, níor, nár, ar, sur, n-ar, munar, cár.

8° But these combinations are not used with :—raib, ru5, ráimís (these have ro- already); feaca (saw), fuair (found) ; sometimes with—tus (gave), táimís (came), dea5aró (went,—by-form of deacáiró) ; usually not with deacáiró (went), dearna (made, did—which already contains ro-).

9° Ro- is used, in affirmative wishes (Optative Subj.) with is, and tá alone :—slán so ra5air—Thank you (ro- included in vb.). Surb amlaíó óuit—The same to you. *Not* with other verbs.—So n-éirí5íó an oróce leat—Good-night.

10° In neg. wishes ro is used with all verbs :—nára' maic 55at-sa—No thanks to you. nár cúití5tear ro 5ao5ar leat—May your exertions not be recompensed.



Raċ ná raib ort go deo—May you never have luck !  
(ro- included in vb.).

**132.**—Verbal noun, and adjective (or participle) :—  
1° Vb. noun :—moladh (G. sg., and N. pl.—molta, molta);  
buadh (G. sg., and N. pl., buailte, buailte). 2° Parti-  
ciple :—molta, molta ; buailte, buailte.

**133.**— (b)—Second Conjugation.

**Active Voice. Indicative Mood.**  
**Present.**

Sg.	Pl.
1. árouiġim-se, íslġim-se, freadġaim-se.	árouiġmíó-ne, íslġmíó-ne, freadġaimíó-ne.
2. árouiġir-se, íslġir-se, freadġair-se.	árouiġeann, íslġeann, freadġann (síóse).
3. árouiġeann, íslġeann, freadġann (seisean, sise).	árouiġio, íslġio, freadġaio siaó san.

**Imperfect.**

(Same endings as in Root Verbs, 129).

**Past**

(Same endings as in Root Verbs, 129).

**Future.**

1. ároócáó-sa, íleoócáó sa, freadrócáó sa.	ároócám-na, íleoócám-na, freadrócám-na.
2. ároócáir-se, íleoócáir-se, freadrócáir-se.	ároócáio, íleoócáio, fread- rócáio (síó-se).
3. ároócáio, íleoócáio, freadrócáio (sise).	ároócáio, íleoócáio, fread- rócáio (siaó san).

**Conditional.**

1. ó'ároócáimn-se, ó'íleoócáimn-se, ó'freadrócáimn-se.
--

(Same endings as in Root Verbs, but without f-).

**Imperative**

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).

**Present Subjunctive.**

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).

**Past Subjunctive.**

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).



## Passive and Autonomous.

1° Pres. Indic. :—árrouĩſtear, íſliſtear, preaſartar.

2° Past Indic. :—oo h-árrouĩſeab, oo h-íſliſeab, oo preaſrab.

3° Impft. Indic. :—oo h-árrouĩſtí, oo h-íſliſtí, oo preaſartí (-tái).

4° Fut. Indic. :—árroócár (árroófár), íſleoócár (-ófar), preaſroócár (-ófar).

5° Conditional :—(oo) h-árroóctái, íſleoóctái, preaſroóctái (-ófái).

6° Imperative :—árrouĩſtear, íſliſtear, preaſartar.

7° Pres. Subj. :—(Same as Imper.).

8° Past Subj. :—(Same as Impft. Indic.).

Vb. n.—árrouſab, íſliuſab, preaſairt (preaſra).

Vb. adj.—árrouĩſte, íſliſte, preaſarta.

N.B.—íſliſim (though its root, íſeal, is syncopated all through) is not a syncopated verb like preaſair. The latter loses the vowel of its 2nd syll. when an inflection beginning with a vowel is added. íſliſim is never syncopated in this way.

134 (a).—Spelling (and pronunciation) like o'árroófá, etc., are due to oo ſeobtá (oo ſeobtar, oo ſeobtí) where b becomes f regularly, because of t.

(b) preaſairt, and other compounds of ſair,—aſairt, taſairt, póſairt—have two vb. n. forms. The one in -t is due to tabairt. Thus—tabair : tabairt :: preaſair : preaſairt. Earlier—preaſra, aſra, taſra, póſra. These we have still, but with a different meaning. The forms in -t denote the name of *the action*; those in -a the *objective content* of the action :—'Sé preaſra fuair sé, The answer he got was . . . . póſra—proclamation, etc. aſra—a claim. taſra—a reference, etc.

## B.—Compound Verbs.

135.—In most so-called irregular verbs, the “irregularity” is chiefly due to the fact that they are **compound**, and appear in two different forms :—



(a) The **Deuterotonic**, *i.e.*, with stress on second syllable :—*do-bèirim*, *do-bèirim*, *do-ḡèibim*.

(b) The **Prototonic**, *i.e.*, with stress on first syllable :—*càbraid*, *àbraid*, *fàḡaid*.

There will, therefore, generally be two forms in the paradigms :—the **Absolute** (generally deuterotonic) and the **Dependent** (always prototonic). The **Dependent** form is used after the **Conjunct Particles** :—

1° The **negatives** :—*ní*, *níor*, *naċ*, *ná*, *nár*, *muna*, *munar*.

2° The **interrogatives** :—*an*, *ar*, *naċ*, *ná*, *nár*.

3° The **oblique relatives** :—*a*, *ar*, *so sur*, *n-a*, *n-ar*.

4° The **compound relative** :—*a*, *ar*.

5° The **conjunctions** :—*so*, *sur*, *óá* (if).

**136.**—Several **roots** are sometimes needed (Cf. Eng. *go*, *went*; *am*, *be*, *was*) :—

1° *ṭá* employs the roots :—*stā* (L. *adstare*, Eng. *stand*) ; *bhu* (L. *fui*) ; *uel* (I. *fuil*, W. *gweled*, to see, O.I. *fil-us*, they are (*Lit.*—behold them)).

2° *do-bèirim*, I give, bring, etc., employs the roots :—*bher* (L. *fero*, E. *bear*) ; *ug* (O.I. *-ucc*)—*cuḡas*.

3° *céigim*, I go, employs the roots :—*steigh*—*céigim* (E. *ve—stige*) ; *reg.*—*raḡad*, O.I. *rega* ; *erg*—*éirig* *a* *córlad*—go to bed (O.I. *eirgg*). Now confused with *éirig*, rise ; *vb. n.*—*out* ; *ued*, in 3 sg. pres. Indic. and in the past Indic.

**137.**—

**I.—*céigim*, I go.**

**Indicative.**

**Pres.—Sg.**—1. *céigim-se*, etc. (with usual endings).

**Pl.**—1. *céigmíó-ne*, etc.

**Impft.—Sg.**—1. *do céiginn-se* (with usual endings).

**Pl.**—1. *do céigmís-ne*, etc.

**Past.—Absolute** :—**Sg.**—*do cuadhas* (*cuas*)-*sa*, *do cuadhas-se*, *do cuairt seisean* (*sise*).

**Pl.**—*do cuadhamair-ne* (*cuamair-ne*) etc. (usual endings).



Past.—Dependent :—Sg.—*deigeas-sa* (*deacas*) (see 139), *deigis-se*, *deagair seisean* (*sise*).

Pl.—*deigeamair-ne*, etc. (usual endings).

Fut.—Sg.—*ragad-sa* (*rac . . .*), *ragair-se*, *ragair seisean*.

Pl.—*ragmíó-ne*, etc. (as usual).

Cond.—Sg.—(*oo*) *ragaimn-se* (as usual). Pl.—(*oo*) *ragaimis-ne*, *ragad sibse*, *ragairóis sin*.

### Autonomous Forms.

Pres. Indic., Imper., and Pres. Subj.—*teigtear*.  
 Impft. Indic.—*teigti*. Fut. Indic.—*ragfar*. Cond.—*ragfi*.  
 Past Indic.—*oo cuadcas*; *níor deigteas*.  
 Past. Subj.—*teigti*.

138.—Vb. n.—*out*. Participle—*mtigte* (*outa* as Participle of Necessity (293A.)). Imper. Act.—*teigm-se*, *teirig-se*, *teigeaó seisean*; *teigmis-ne*, etc. (as usual).  
 Pres. Subj. :—*teigeaó-sa* (like *buaiteaó*). Past Subj.—*teiginnse* (like *buaínn*).

139.—Notes :—1° The 3 sg. pres. Indic. was, in O.I. *tét* (i.e. *céro*, still used in U.). The root is used, also found in past tense. *Teigeann* is modelled on the other persons (root,—steigh). 2° *Deigeas* (*deacas*)—Munster—is analogical. *oo cuair* when prototonic gives *deacair* (U. and Conn.). The Munster form is due to the fut. *ragair*, while the U. and Conn. fut. *racair* is due to *deacair*.

140.— II.—*teigm* (*tagaim*), I come.

Pres. Indic.—*teigm-se*, *tagaim-se*, etc. Pl.—*teigmíó-ne*, *tagaimíó-ne*, etc.

Impft. Indic.—(*oo*) *teiginn-se*, *tagaimn-se*, etc. Pl.—(*oo*) *teigmis-ne*, *tagaimis-ne*, etc.

Past Indic.—(*oo*) *танаг-sa* (*тана-sa*), *танаís-se*, *таи́г seisean*. Pl.—(*oo*) *танамair-ne*, *танаба́air-se*, *тана́odar san* (*танга́odar*).

Future.—*tiocfaó-sa*, etc. Pl.—*tiocfaimíó-ne*, etc. (usual endings).



Conditional.—(ro) tíoḃaimn-se, etc. Pl. (ro) tíoḃaimís-ne, etc. (usual endings).

Imperative.—tíḡim-se (táḡaim-se), tair-se, tíḡeáð (táḡaó) seiseán (sise). Pl.—tíḡimis-ne (táḡaimís-ne), etc. (usual endings).

Pres. Subj.—tíḡeáð-sa (táḡaó-sa), etc. Pl. tíḡimíð-ne (táḡaimíð-ne), etc.

Past Subj.—tíḡimn-se (táḡaimn-se)—same as Impft. Indic. without ro.

Vb. noun.—teáct (G. teácta); O.I. tuidecht (from do-tiag) and tichtu (from do-icc). We still have tíḡeáct (turóeáct) esp. in poetry.—Ḃoḃairí na tíre áḡ tíḡeáct ar a ḡcapall (An Spailpín fánaó).

Participle.—tíḡte, táḡta, táḡaíte.

Pres. Auton.—tíḡtear, táḡtar. Impft.—tíḡtí, táḡtí.

Past „ tánaḡas. Fut.—tíoḃar. Conditional.—tíoḃfí.

Imper. „ tíḡtear, tíḡeáð, táḡtar, táḡta.

Subj. „ Pres.— „ „ „ „  
Past.—tíḡtí, tíḡtí, táḡtí.

### Notes.

1° Pres. Indic.—Deuteronomic forms are lost, as in all the other tenses. (O.I. do-icc, etc.). Táḡ- comes from tíḡ- through teáḡ-. The short form tíḡ in 3 sg. is mostly used in—tíḡ le. . . . ní tíḡ le—can, cannot.

2° Past.—ánaḡ is the preterital stem corresponding to -íḡ (O.I. -icc). 2nd sg. also written tánaḡais, but the ḡ is silent in uíḃ laḡḡaire and Corca Óuibne. It is silent also in pl.

3° Fut.—-c- comes from -ḡ- under influence of r (=n), and is *broad* and *written* c (not ḡ).

4° Condit.—Here “c” remains in 2 sg., although “f” is pronounced “f” and not “h.” The same remark applies to tíoḃar, tíoḃfí (Aut.).

5° Imper.—The 2 sg. tair is from—either (a) to-air-icc, or (b) rethim (ríctim), like fóir, help.



III.—*im̃c̃iḡim*, I go away.

141.—In form, a compound of *céiḡim* (vb. n. *im-ṭeac̃t*). But it has passed over to the *-iḡ* class. Fut.—*im̃teõc̃aṑ-sa*, etc. Cond.—*o' im̃teõc̃aimn-se*, etc.

Many other verbs, too, have passed over to the *-iḡ* class, with *-óc-*, *-eõc-* in fut. and cond.—*iom̃pũiḡim*, I turn (O.I. 3 sg. *im-soí*). But vb. n.—*iom̃pó̃õ* (*iom̃páil*). *ṭẽarnũiḡim*, I depart, die, steal away, etc. Vb. n. *ṭẽarnam̃* (<*sníom̃*), *ṭẽarnó̃õ* (anal. from *iom̃pó̃õ*). *é̃ir̃iḡim*, I rise (root *reg*). Vb. n.—*é̃ir̃ḡe*. *ṭiãṭrũiḡim*, I enquire. Vb. n. *ṭiãṭrãĩõe*. *ṭẽang̃m̃ũiḡim* (*ṭẽang̃m̃ũiḡim*), I meet, happen, chance (Compound of *-iḡ*). Vb. n.—*ṭẽang̃m̃áil*, *ṭẽang̃báil* (owing to *ḡabáil*). *ṭẽastũiḡim*, I am wanting, missed, needful to ; I die, etc. Vb. n.—*ṭẽastáil*, *ṭẽastabáil*. In U.I. MSS. common in the sense of “die.” —*ṭáir̃õ ṭir̃ lunõam̃ ḡañ c̃ontab̃air̃c̃ ó̃ ṭẽastaiḡ* (Elegy on *Eoḡan Ruad̃ Ó Néill*)—the London men (the English in Ireland) are out of danger since he died.

IV.—*õo-ḡeib̃im*, I get, find.

142.—Pres. Indic.—*õo-ḡeib̃im-se*, etc. (Absolute).

*ṭaḡaim-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Impft. Indic.—*õo-ḡeib̃imn-se*, etc. (Absolute). *ṭaḡaimn-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Past Indic.—*ṭũaras-sa*, etc. (the same in Dependent).

Fut. Indic.—*õo-ḡeob̃aṑ-sa*, etc. (Abs.). *ṭũiḡẽaṑ-sa*, etc. (Dependent).

Condit.—*õo-ḡeob̃aimnse*, etc. (Abs.). *ṭũiḡimn-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Imper.—*ṭaḡaim-se*, *ṭaiḡ-se*, *ṭaḡaṑ seisean*, *ṭaiḡm̃is-ne*, *ṭaiḡĩõ-se*, *ṭaiḡõis sin*.

Subj.—Pres.—*ṭaḡaṑ-sa*, etc. (usual endings).

Past.—Same as *Dependent* Impft. Indic.

Auton.—Pres. Indic.—*õo-ḡeib̃ṭear* (Abs.). *ṭãc̃tar* (*ṭaḡ-tar*) Dep.

Impft. Indic.—*õo-ḡeib̃ṭí* (Abs.). *ṭãc̃tí* (*ṭaiḡtí*) Dep.

Past Indic.—Abs. and Dep.—*ṭũar̃c̃as*, *ṭrĩc̃*, *ṭũaraṑ*.



Fut. Indic.—*ro-geobtar* (Abs.). *fuigtar* (*fuig-tear*) Dep.

Condit.—*ro-geobtaoi* (-*taí*, -*tí*. Abs.). *fuigfi*, *fuigtí* Dep.

Imper.—*factar*, *fastar*. Pres. Subj. the same. Past.—*faigtí*, *fastí*.

Vb. n.—*fastáil*, G. *fastála* (<*fo-šabála*).

### Notes.

1° The deuterotonic forms come from *ro-geib-*, the prototonic form *fo-šab-*. The slender *-geib-* is due to the reduplicated fut. stem *geob-* (O.I. *géb-*).

2° *ro-* is often dropped in the absol. forms (*š* retaining its aspiration). It is kept usually in rel. clauses, assuming the function of a relative.

3° *fastám* < *fo-šabám*. Sometimes spelled *fastbám*, but needlessly, as *-b-* is lost in speech. *š* is necessary—to denote the *diphthong*.

4° *fuigear* < *fo-geobar* is pronounced, in Munster, as *fastar* (Subj. < *fo-šabar*). This leads to the widespread confusion between Condit. and past Subj.

5° In mod. I. (as in O.I.) the vb. n., participle and imper. are prototonic (except in Munster, in vbs. like *tiomáim*, with 1st syll. short, 2nd long. Here the long vowel attracts the accent).

6° *factar* < *fastar*, where *t*=*n* unvoices *š*, giving *c* (*τ-* being then restored).

### V.—*šabám*, I take, go, etc.

143.—A *simple* verb, found in preceding *compound*. It has an *é-* fut. *geobar* (earlier, *gébad* ; *š*, unaspirated). The neg. and interrog. forms are :—*ní geobar*, *an ngeobar sé?* etc., as compared with *ní bfuigear*, *an bfuigir sé*, of the compound (IV). In *ní bfuaras*, *ní* seems to eclipse. It does not. It aspirates *f*, as usual, and *b* comes, not from *f-*, but from *u*. I.e., it is a *consonantal glide* from *i* to *ú*. Then all the prototonic forms take *b-* after *ní* by analogy. (Except in Pass. and Auton. where *ní* does not aspirate—*ní factar*, *ní fuartas*).



144.— VI.—**Do-ḡnīm, I do, make.**

Pres. Indic.—**do-ḡnīm-se, do-ḡnīr-se, do ḡníonn seisean** (Abs.) **ḡéanam-se, etc.** (Dep.—**ḡeim-se, etc.** Munster)

Pl.—**do-ḡnīmíō-ne, do-ḡníonn síb-se, do-ḡníō síadōsan** (Abs.) **ḡéanamíō-ne, etc.** (Dep.).—**ḡeimíō-ne** (Munster).

Impft. Indic.—**do-ḡnīnn-se, do-ḡníteā-sa, do ḡníōḡ seisean** (Abs.) **do-ḡnīmís-ne, do ḡníōḡ síb-se, do-ḡníōís sin** (Abs.) **ḡéanamn-se** (**ḡeiminn-se, Munster**), etc. (usual endings. Dep.)

Past Indic.—**do rinneas-sa, do rinnis-se, do-rinne seisean** (Abs.) **do rinneamair-ne, do-rinneabair-se, do-rinneadōar san** (Abs.) **ḡearnas-sa, ḡearnais-se, ḡearna** (**ḡearnaiō**) **seisean** (Dep.) **ḡearnamair-ne, etc.** (usual endings) Dep.

Fut.—Abs. and Dep.—**ḡéanḡad-sa, etc.** (usual endings).

Condit.—(**do**) **ḡéanḡaimn-se, etc.** (**ní**) **ḡéanḡaimn-se, etc.**

Imperat.—**ḡeim-se** (**ḡéanam-se**), etc. (as usual).

Subj.—Pres.—**ḡemeāḡ-sa** (**ḡéanaḡ-sa**), etc. Past.—**ḡeiminnse** (**ḡéanamnse**), etc.

Auton. (and Pass.) :—

Pres. Indic.—**do ḡnítear** (Abs.). **ḡeimtear** (**ḡéantar**). Dep.

Impft. Indic.—**do ḡnícī** (Abs.). **ḡeimcī** (**ḡéantcī**). (Dep.)

Past Indic.—**do rinneaḡ** (Abs.). **ḡearnaḡ**. (Dep.)

Fut. Indic.—**ḡéanḡar**. Condit.—**ḡéanḡí** (**ḡéanḡaḡí**).

Imper. and Pres. Subj.—**ḡeimtear** (**ḡéantar**). Past Subj.—**ḡeimcī** (**ḡéantcī**).

**Notes.**

1° In Munster I. the pres. stem is usually **ḡeim-** (also in Impft. Indic., Imper., Subj.) **ḡéan-** being reserved for Fut. and Condit. (on analogy of **beir-** pres. stem, **béar-** fut.).

2° The pres. and impft. Indic. abs. forms are nearly obsolete in Munster.

3° Instead of the past Indic. as in paradigm, **ḡemeas-sa, etc.**, are usual in Munster, both Abs. and Dep.

4° The deuterotonic forms of the fut. are now seldom used. The fut. and condit. show a blend of two types—



the é- fut., and the r (or b-) fut.—*ro gheanad*, or *ro ghean*, and *ro-ghéanfaid*, *ghéanfaid*. K. often has *ro dhéan*, instead of *ro ghean*, owing to the prototonic forms.

5° In past Aut., instead of *ro rinnead*, etc., *ro dheimed*, *níor dheimed*, etc., are usual in Munster.

6° Vb. n.—*dhéanam* (G.—*dhéanta*). Participle—*dhéanta*.

#### 145.— VII.—*beirim* (and Compounds). I bear, I carry.

Pres. Indic.—*beirim-se*, etc.

Impft. Indic.—(*ro*) *beirinn-se*, etc. Past.—*rugas-sa*, etc.

Fut. Indic.—*béarfad-sa*, etc. Condit.—(*ro*) *béarfaimn-se*, etc.

Imper.—*beirim-se*, *beir-se*, etc. Subj.—Pres.—*beiread-sa*, etc.

Past Subj.—*beirinn-se*, etc.

Aut. and Pass :—

Pres. Indic.—*beirtear* (-*tear*). Impft.—*beirtí* (*beirtí*).

Past.—*rugad*. Fut.—*béarfair*. Cond.—*béarfí* (-*faí*).

Imper.—*beirtear* (-*tear*).

Pres. Subj.—*beirtear* (-*tear*). Past.—*beirtí* (-*tí*).

#### Notes.

1° The past tense is a compound of *ro* and *-us* (O.I. -*ucc*). Cf.—*tug*.

2° The fut. (primary, and secondary) is a blend of the é- fut. and the r- fut. K. *ro bheir* : mod. *ro béarfad*.

Vb. n.—*bheir* (G.—*bheirte*). Participle.—*bheirte*.

#### 146.— VIII.—*Do-bheirim*, I give, bring, etc.

Pres. Indic.—*do bheirim-se*, etc. (Abs.). *tabraim-se*, etc. (Dep.).

Impf. Indic.—*do bheirinn-se*, etc. (Abs.) *tabraimn-se*, etc. (Dep.).

Past Indic.—(*ro*) *tugas-sa*, etc.—(Abs. and Dep.).

Fut. Indic.—*do bhearfad-sa*, etc. (Abs.). *tabarfad-sa*, etc. (Dep.).

Condit.—*do bhearfaimn-se*, etc. (Abs.). *tabarfaimn-se*, etc. (Dep.).



Imper.—*tugaim-se* (*tabraimse*), *tabair-se*, *tugad* (*tabrad*) *seisean*.

*tugaimis-ne* (*tabraimis ne*), *tugaid-se* (*tabraid-se*), *tugaidis* (*tabraidis*) *sin*.

Subj.—*tugad-sa* (*tabrad-sa*), etc. Past.—*tugaimn-se* (*tabraimn-se*), etc.

Vb. n.—*tabairt* (G.—*tabarta*). Participle.—*tabarta*, *tugta*.

Pass. (and Auton.) :—

Pres. Indic.—*do beirtear*, *tabrtar*, *tugtar* (Munster).

Impft.—*do beirti*, *tabrtai*, *tugti* (Munster).

Past.—*do tugad*. Fut.—*do beartar*, *tabrtar*.

Condit.—*do beartai*, *tabrtai* (*-pai*).

Imper.—*tugtar* (Munster) ; *tabrtar*.

Subj.—*tugtar* (Munster) ; *tabrtar* (Pres.).

*tugti* ( „ ) ; *tabrtai* (Past.).

### Notes.

1° *tabraim* is the regular prototonic form of *do-beirim*. Instead of this, a present formed from the perf. stem *tug-* is much used in Munster, not only as dep. but also abs. *beirim-se*, etc., are used (but with *b-*) in asseverations like—*beirim-se a buideacas leis an Aitair Sioruide* (*Séadna*)—I thank the Eternal Father for it.

2° In the Impft.—the Munster forms are :—*do tugaimn-se*, etc., instead of those given in the paradigm.

3° The vb. n. was at first *tabart*, but even in O.I. *tabairt* also is used as nominative.

### 147.— IX.—*Deirim* (*addeirim*), I say.

*Absolute.*

*Relative.*

*Dependent.*

Pres. Indic.

*deirim-se*, etc.

*addeirim-se*, etc.

*adbraim-se*, etc.

Impft. Indic.

*deirimn-se*, etc.

*addeirimn-se*, etc.

*adbraimnse*, *adarta-sa*, etc.

Past Indic.

1. *dubart-sa*

2. *dubrais-se*

3. *dubairt*

*seisean*

*aduðart-sa*, etc.

(Same as Absolute).

(Usual endings in pl.



## Fut. Indic.

<i>Absolute.</i>	<i>Relative.</i>	<i>Dependent</i>
deárfad-sa, etc.	doéarfad-sa, etc.	abrócad-sa, etc.
	Condit.	
deárfaimn-se, ,,	doéarfaimn-se, ,,	abrócaimn-se, ,,
	Imper.	
abram-se, abair-se, abrað seisean, etc.	<i>Always prototonic.</i>	

Pres. Subj.—abrað-sa, etc. Past Subj.—abramn-se, etc.

Autonomous (and Passive) :—Indic.—Pres.—deirtear (abs.), doeirtear (direct rel.), abartar (dep.). Impft.—deirtí, doeirteí, abartí. Past.—dubrað, adubrað ; dubrtas, adubrtas. Fut.—deárfar, doéarfar, abróctar (abrófar). Condit.—deárfí, doéarfí, abróctai (abrófí). Imperat. and pres. Subj.—abartar. Past Subj.—abartí. Vb. n.—ráð (G. ráithe). Participle—ráithe, abarta.

## Notes.

1° The deirim forms resist aspiration :—ní deirim ; I do not say ; isé deirim, this is what I say. They are nearly always used as dep. forms in Munster in all the tenses of the indic.

2° The rel. forms are *direct* only. *Oblique*. rels. take the dep. forms :—an té go n-abartar air, he of whom people say. But in Munster, also :—an té go ndeirtear air (see note 1°).

3° Instead of deireann (3. sg. and 2 pl.) a short form deir is common in Munster.

4° adubart (O.I. as-ru-burt) shows confusion of do- and as, and substitution of do- for ro-. The 2 sg. is an s- preterite, 1 and 3 sg. t- preterites ; but both s- and t- are dropped in pl.

5° The vb. n. in O.I. was eperit (now abairt=speech, phrase).

## X.—Toirbhirim, I deliver, present, etc.

148.—A compound of beirim, but conjugated as a simple vb. The vb. n. is toirbheart, toirbirt. Fóbraim, I attack, begin, etc. is another comp. of beir, now treated as a simple vb. with vb. n. fóbairt.



## XI.—(Do)-cím, I see.

## Absolute.

Pres. Indic.—cím-se, cír-se, cionn seisean.  
 címiò-ne, cionn siùse, cíò siaò san.

## Dependent.

feicim-se, etc. (regular endings).

## Absolute.

Impft. Indic.—cinn-se (etc.—but cíòò- in 3 sg., 2 pl.).

## Dependent.

feicinn-se, etc. (regular endings).

## Absolute.

Past Indic.—do connac-sa	} Pl. do connacamaíR-ne.
„ connaicís-se	
„ connaic seisean	

etc. (regular endings)

## Dependent.

feaca-sa, feacaís-se, feacaíò seisean.  
 feacamaíR-ne, etc.

## Absolute.

Fut. Indic.—cifeaðo-sa, etc. (regular endings).

## Dependent.

feicfeaðo-sa, etc.

Condit.—cifrinn-se, etc. (regular endings).  
 feicfrinn-se, etc.

Imperat.—feicim-se, feic-se, etc. (usual endings).

*Always prototonic.*

Pres. Subj.—feiceaðo-sa, etc. Past.—feicinn-se, etc.

*Always prototonic.*

Pass. and Auton.—Indic.—Pres.—cítear, feicítear.

Impft.—cící, feiccí.

Past.—do connactas, feactas. Fut.—cifar, feicfar.

Condit.—cífí, feicfí.

Vb. n.—feiscint (feicsint). G.—feisceana, feicseana, F.

Participle.—feicte.



## Notes.

1° *Ċim-se*, etc., are for *vo-ċim-se*, etc. O.I. 3 sg. was *av-cí*, from the prototonic form of which come the dep. forms (with *ř-* added). *řeicim-se* is for *řaicim-se*. Cf. O.I. *maic* > *meic*, *mic*.

2° Besides *vo ċonnac*, *vo ċonnacas*, and *vo ċonnarcas* (root *vearc-*) occur. *řeaca* (Munster), *řaca* (*řacas*) is a reduplicated perfect (with *ř-* added. <*ad-ce-cha*).

3° *řeiscim* (O.I. *aiccsiu*, G. *aiccsen*, D. *aiccsin*) shows init. *ř-*, change of *-aic-* to *-eic-* metathesis of *c* and *s*, and addition of a final *-t*.

XII.—*Ċloisim, cluinim, I hear.*

149.—Now simple, regular vbs. O.I. *ro-cluinethar*. Past Indic.—*vo ċloiseas*, *vo clumeas*, and also (*vo*) *ċuala* (*vo-ċualas*) from O.I. perf. *ro-cuala*. Vb. n.—*clos*, *cloisim*, *cloistim*; *clumsim* (due to *řeic-sim*).

XIII.—*Riġim, roicim, I reach.*

150.—*Riġim* < O.I. *ro-icc* (cf. *do-icc* = mod. *tiġ-*). The aspirated *-ġ-* may be due to *roicim*. Past Indic.—*ránaġsa* (cf. *ránaġ*). Vb. n.—*riactaim*, *roctaim*.—*Roichim* < O.I. *ro-saig*, reaches—*ġus a roiceann saibbreas* (T.B.B.)—to whom wealth comes. Vb. n.—*roctaim*. We now use *sroicim*, *sroisim*, conjugated as simple verbs. Vb. n.—*sroicim*, *sroisim*.

XIV.—*iteim, I eat.*

151.—Fut.—*iosav-sa* (*iosřav-sa*), etc. Condit.—*v'iosaimn-se*, etc. Vb. n. *ite* (*not iteav*), G.—*itte*. Participle—*itte*. The fut. is the only example remaining of the *s-* Fut.

XV.—*řeavar, I know.*

152.—The only *deponent* vb. in mod. I. (O.I. *ro-fitir*, knows). Used only in neg. or virtually neg. sentences, and with either past or pres. meaning. 3 sg. past, *řeoir* (common in Munster). Conjugation:—*řeavar-sa*, *řeavrais-se*, *řeavar* (*řeoir*) *seisean*.—*řeavramair-ne*, *řeavrabair-se*, *řeavřavar-san*. Vb. n.—*řios*, G. *řasa*.



XVI.—**ἔαίμ, I am (Substantive Verb).**

153.—Indic.—Actual pres.—ἔαίμ-se, ἔαοι-se, ἔα seisean.—ἔαίμιο-ne, ἔάτᾱοι-se, ἔάρο σιάο san (these are the abs. forms). Dep.—ἔαίμιο-ne, etc., but ἔαί, in 3 sg. and 2 pl.

Habitual pres.—ἔαίμ-se, ἔαίρ-se, ἔαίον seisean ; ἔαίμιο-ne, ἔαίον σίῃ-se (ἔαί), ἔαί σιάο san. (Abs. and Dep.).

Impft.—(το) ἔαίμ-se, ἔαίτᾱ-sa, ἔαίο seisean ; (το) ἔαίμ-is-ne, ἔαίο σίῃ-se, ἔαίς sin. (Abs. and —without το—Dep.).

Past abs.—(το) ἔαί-sa, ἔαί-se, ἔαί seisean ; (το) ἔαίμαίρ-ne, ἔαίῃ-sa, ἔαίῃ-sa. Dep.—ἔαί-sa, etc. But 3 sg.—ἔαί.

Fut.—ἔαί-sa, ἔαίρ-se, ἔαί seisean ; ἔαίμιο-ne, ἔαί σίῃ-se, ἔαί σιάο san. (Abs. and Dep.).

Condit.—(το) ἔαίμ-se, ἔαίτᾱ-sa, ἔαί seisean ; (το) ἔαίμ-is-ne, ἔαί σίῃ-se, ἔαίς sin (Abs. and—without το—Dep.).

Imperat.—ἔαίμ-se, ἔαί-se, ἔαί seisean ; ἔαίμ-is-ne, ἔαί-sa, ἔαίς sin.

Pres. Subj.—ἔαί-sa, ἔαίρ-se, ἔαί seisean ; ἔαίμιο-ne, ἔαί σίῃ-se (ἔαίτᾱ) ἔαί σιάο san.

Past Subj.—ἔαίμ-se, ἔαίτᾱ-sa, ἔαί seisean ; ἔαίμ-is-ne, ἔαί σίῃ-se, ἔαίς sin.

Autonomous :—Pres. Indic.—ἔαίτᾱ, ἔαίτᾱ (Actual) ; ἔαίτᾱ (Hab.). Impft.—ἔαί. Past.—το ἔαίτᾱ (abs.) ; ἔαίτᾱ (dep.). Fut.—ἔαίτᾱ. Condit.—ἔαί. Imperat.—ἔαίτᾱ. Pres. Subj.—ἔαίτᾱ. Past.—ἔαί, ἔαί.

Vb. n.—ἔαί (ἔ-).

Participle.—ἔαίτᾱ (mostly as *Part. of Necessity*).

**Notes.**

1° The neg. forms of ἔαί- are ἔαίμ-se, etc. (<ní ἔαίμ-se). Auton.—ἔαίτᾱ.

2° Instead of ἔαοι, there is also ἔαίρ, and ἔαί tú ; instead of ἔάτᾱοι, ἔαί σίῃ.

3° The spelling ἔαίμ-se, ἔαίμ-ne, is wrong.

4° In the Past abs.—1, 2 sg. and all the pl. forms are re-constructions from 3 sg. (O.I. boí, baí>ἔαί). The dep. forms are near O.I. enclitic forms :—1 sg.—ἔαί (we



have added -s) ; 3 sg. ·robae, ·rabae (early mod. *raibē*, now *raib*) ; 1 pl. ·robammar, 2.—·robaid (now *raibaid*), 3.—·robatar, ·rabatar.

5° The short vowels of Fut. and Condit. (as found in Munster) reflect, not O.I. 1st and 2nd. Fut., but O.I. pres. and past Subj. Some of their uses are clearly Subj. E.g.—*fan go mberò sé annso*—Wait till he be here (Subj. of indefinite time). Cf. *fan go rāgaid sé*—Wait until he come. Here, however, U.I. uses the *ro-* Subj.—*fan go raib (=raib) sé annseo*.—*Óá mbeaò sé annso*—If he were here (The mod. classical usage requires *the past Subj.* after *óá*).

6° The past Subj. forms—*binn*, etc., given in many books, are altogether spurious, and should not be tolerated. The vb. *rá* is, in fact, the only vb. (if we except *is*.—See 154) in which the past Subj. is not the same as the Impft. Indic.

### XVII.—The Copula (*is*).

154.—Pres. Indic.—Sg. and pl.—*is* (in all persons). Abs. Dep.—*ab, b* (see *Notes*, 2<sup>3</sup>). Or the vb. disappears.

Impft. and Past :—Abs.—Sg. and pl.—*bá* (all persons); *b'* before vowel or *f*. Dep.—*bá* (see *Notes*, 5), *b'* (before vowel, or *f*), or the vb. disappears.

Fut.—Now nearly obsolete. I once heard, near *Céim an fíaró* (W. Cork)—*má bus tíom é*, if it will be mine.

Condit.—*bá, báò*, sg. and pl. all persons, Abs. *bá, b'*—or disappears (Dep.).

Pres. Subj.—*bá, ab, á'*, sg. and pl.

Past Subj.—*báò, bá, b'* (before vowels), sometimes *bá n-* sg. and pl., all persons.

### Notes.

1° All extant forms of *is* are, etymologically 3 sg. Syntactically, of course, they may be 1st, 2nd, or 3rd person. Such lists as :—1. *is mé*, I am. 2. *is tu*, thou art. 3. *is é*, he is—are absurd. The pronouns here are predicates, not subjects, and the vb. given as 1st or 2nd person is, *de facto*, syntactically 3rd, while the vb. given as 3rd person may be 1st or 2nd.—*is mé á ví ann* (Subj.—*an té á ví ann*.—3rd person). *is tu fé nōéar é*



(Subj.—*an té pé nōear é.*—3rd person). *1s é an vīabāi tu* (Subj. *tu*, 2nd person) !

2° The dep. form pres. disappears after :—(a) *nī*, (*nī n-* before vowel). (b) *nāc*. (c) *an ?* (d) *sur* (before consonants, and sometimes before vowels) (e) *muran* (= *muna*) before consonants (f) oblique rel. before consonants.

3° It appears as *-b*, *-ab* after *sur* (sometimes before vowels), *nār*, opt. subj. before vowels (as *ā'* before consonants) *muna* (before vowels), the oblique relatives *ar*, *sur*, *n-ar* (before vowels).

4° *ṽāṽ*, as past tense is wrong. It should be *ṽā*. Condit. *ṽāṽ* is permissible, though *ṽā* is more usual. The Impft. is ignored by other mod. Grammars.

5° In the dep. past *ṽā* generally combines with preceding *ro*, giving *'rō* (before vowels) ; before consonants, it disappears, but aspirates. When *ro* is not used *ṽā* (*bu*) appears before consonants—*an ṽpear ā mbu leis i* (n. n§. p. 21)—the man who owned it.

6° The pres. subj. is usually *-b*, *-ab*.—*surb āmlārō ṽuit*—the same to you ! But in U. and W'ford I. *ṽā* is common: *so mba hé ṽuit* (U.)—the same to you. *so mba n-āmlārō ṽuit* (W'f'd.). In the opt. subj. *sura'*, *nāra'* are common before consonants—*sura' fearroe tu é*—may you be the better of it.

7° Past subj.—*ṽā mba māit teat é*—if you wished it. *ṽā mb'āil leis é*—if he so wished. *ṽā mba n-é ā ṽeāṽ ann*—if it had been he.

8° There is no vb. n. The want is supplied thus :—*saṣart iseāṽ me, 7 is fearr liom san, nā mé vēit am' ṽoōctūr*—I am a priest, and I prefer that to *being a doctor*.

## 155.— XVIII.—Remains of Compound Verbs.

1° See exx. in 141.

2° *īōṽbraim* (*īōbrim*), I sacrifice. A comp. of *beirim*, vb. n.—*īōṽbairt* (*īōbirt*).

3° *fuilingim*, I suffer (O.I. 3 sg. *fo-loing*). Now a simple syncopated vb. (2nd conj.). Fut.—*fuilingeoāṽ* (*fuīiceoāṽ*). Vb. n.—*fulang*, *fulag*, *fuiling*, and U. *fulstim*.



4° *Ṭarṇaim*—I bark at, urge, etc., vb. n. *ṭarṇann*, *ṭatáint*, was a compound also. (O.I. *do-seinn*, drives).

5° *Ṣoluiḡim*—I hide, cover, < *ṣo* + *tuḡim*, I lay (lie) under. Vb. n. *ṣolac*. Now conjugated as a simple vb.

6° *Ṣaisnéisim* (*aisnéisim*), I predicate, etc. < O.I. vb. n.—*aisndís* (< *as-ind-et*, relates). Now treated as *simple*. Vb. n. *aisnéis*, *ṣaisnéis*.

7° *Ḍóláicim*, *Ḍónáicim*—I bury, vb. n.—*Ḍólacaḍ*, *Ḍólacan*, *Ḍónacaḍ*. *Ḍólacan* comes (by metathesis of *l* and *n*) from *Ḍó-anacut* (O.I. *aingid*, protects).

8° *Cúmrouḡim*—I defend, cover, etc., vb. n.—*cúmṛac* (< O.I. *cumtach*, vb. n. of *con-utuing*, builds).

9° *Ṭárla*—happened, < O.I. *.tarla* < *do-rala* (*ro-la*) has the two preps. *roo*, and *ro*.

10° *Tuicim*, I fall, vb. n.—*id*. O.I. 3 sg. *do-tuit*. The old perfect *torcáir* occurs in poetry. It comes from *do-cer*, *do-ro-chair*. The root “*cer*” is seen in *críon* (*crín*), withered. Cf. O.I. *ara-chrin*—perishes, and L. *cernuus*, with face towards earth, bowing, etc.

11° *Coméadóim*, I keep < O.I. *comét*, vb. n. of the obsolete compound *con.óí*, keeps. U.I. vb. n. *coméaḍ*. In Munster *c-* is usually slender.

12° *Ionmarbaim*, I banish, is a compound of O.I. *ben-*.



## CHAPTER VI.

### ADVERBS, Etc.

156.—An Adverb is a word or phrase or clause used to modify the meaning of words expressing action or quality. The modification is various, giving the following classes of adverbs :—A.—Modal. B.—Local. C.—Temporal. D.—Interrogative. E.—Causal. F.—Negative. G.—Quantitative. H.—Multiplicative. I.—Asseverating. J.—Concessive.

#### 157.—A.—Modal Adverbs :—

1° Formed from adjectives by prefixing the prep. *go* (see 159 1°)—*go maic*, well ; *go h-olc*, badly ; *go rána*, boldly ; *go breáḡ bog*, very easily. But the adj. without *go* is often adverbial :—*ní túbairt sé na focail lom díreac mar a teastuig uata* (CMD. 333)—He did not say the words *precisely* as they wanted. *tós bog é*—take things easily. Participles are preceded by *go*, only when the participial meaning is obscured or lost.—*abair amac é go h-oscailte* (CMO. 333)—Say it out openly.

2° From nouns :—*'na súròe*, up (out of bed) ; *cor ar bit*, at all ; *ar an gcuma san*, thus ; *ar éigim báis*, with the greatest difficulty ; *i n-aisge*, free, gratis ; *oe geit*, suddenly ; *m-aisdear*, in vain ; *ar soḡar*, at a trot ; *nílím ar buile ná ar bámròe*, I'm not in the least bit furious.

3° Adverbial prefixes :—*An* (*ana*), very ; *go h-ana-maic*, very well ; *bit*, lasting ; *bit-buan*, everlasting ; *buan*, lasting ; *buan-tseasmac*, persevering ; *leac*, half ; *go leac-amavánta*, half-foolishly.

4° From pronouns :—*amlaio*, thus ; *mar sin*, like that ; *leis*, also ; *preisim* (Conn.), also.



## B.—Local Adverbs :—

(a).—The Point	Rest at	Motion towards	Motion from
1. Here.	annso, i bpus	anall, i leit	anonn.
2. There	annsan } annsóro }	anonn, sall	anall.
3. Above	túas	suas	anuas.
4. Below	tíos	síos	aníos.
5. North	tuaró	ó tuaró	adtuaró.
6. South	teas	ó teas	an'teas.
7. East	toir	soir	anoir.
8. West	tíar	síar	aníar.
9. Inside	istig	isteach	amach.
10. Outside	amuig	amach	isteach.

(b) In addition to these we have :—*lastuaró*, on the N. side ; *laisteas*, on the S. side ; *lastoir*, on the E. side ; *lastiar*, on the W. side ; *lastuas*, on the upper side ; *lastíos*, on the lower side ; *lastall*, on the other side ; *lasmuig*, outside ; *laistig*, inside. All these become **compound preps.** by adding *de* :—*lastuaró de'n cailteán*, north of the castle ; *lastall de'n Iordán*, on the other side of the Jordan ; *laistig de dá bliain*, within 2 years (temporal) ; *lasmuig de Séana*, with the exception of Séana.

(c) From prep.+noun.—*i dtuaisge*, in safe keeping ; *i dtómas*, in store for ; *ar tosa*, in front ; *cum cinn*, ahead ; *ó céile*, apart.

## C.—Temporal Adverbs :—

1° Noun-forms, with or without the article :—*Anois*, now ; *arís*, again ; *inniu*, to-day ; *inoé*, yesterday ; *anoct*, to-night ; *aréir*, last night ; *anuir*, last year.

2° The A. of time :—*amall*, for a while ; *seachtmáin*, for a week.

3° The G. of time :—In *día luam*, etc., *día* is a G. of time. K. often has G. of time with *gach* :—*gach mara*, every morning ; *gach bliana*, every year. These are due to *mí gach bliana*—a month of every year, etc.



4° D. or A. with prepositions :—*ar maidin*, in the morning ; *um tráchnóna*, in the evening ; *umanoirtear*, the day after to-morrow ; *de ló is o'oróce*, by day and night ; *coigtróis(-óeas)* is *lá moiu*, this day fortnight (in the past) ; *coigtróis ó moiu*, this day fortnight (in the future).

5° Prep. pronouns :—*riam*, ever (*lit.* before it) ; *ceana*, already (*lit.* without it). *Coróce*, ever (<co *no'róce*) used of the fut. or, in a general way, of all time.

D.—Interrogative Adverbs :—*Cá?* where? whence? whither? *Canad?* where? whither? *Ca'toin*, *ca h-uair?* when? *Cionnus*, *conus?* how? *An fada?* *Cia an fad?* how long? *Ca' é mar?* *Soiré mar (U.)?* how? *Ca' mar seall ar . . .* what about? *Ca' uime (cuise)?* wherefore?

E.—Causal Adverbs :—*Óá bríḡ sin*, *uime sin*, therefore ; *cuise sin*, for that purpose ; *Óá bárr san*, *Óá óeasḡaib sin*, in consequence of that (the latter of bad or untoward results).

F.—Negative Adverbs :—*ní*, *níor* ; *éa*, *éar (U.)* ; *naé*, *ná*, *nár*.

G.—Quantitative Adverbs :—

1° The A. of Extent in Degree (see 175 A 4) :—*Óá sé pas beaḡ fuar*—it is somewhat cold ; *bí sé ar meisge iarra'ctín*—he was just a trifle tipsy ; *ma'ctnuigeanm sé siúo an ioma'o*—he thinks too much.

2° D. or A. with prep.—*ar éigim*, with difficulty ; *go leor*, enough ; *go léir*, entirely.

3° Intensive adv. prefixes are, of course, quantitative: *Sár-*, *Ró-*, *Ríoḡ-* very.

H.—Multiplicative Adverbs :—*fé oó*, twice ; *seacht b'pearr*, ever so much better ; *leat-óeanta*, half-done.

I.—Asseverating Adverbs :—*So deimim (go dearb'ta)*, really ; *go deimim 7 go dearb'ta ('am briat'ar 7 'am basa)*, really and truly ; *dar fíad*, *darfa liat*, *dar fíad na feola*, *dar fíad 7 fíolar*—all strong forms of “assuredly.”



**J.—Concessive Adverbs :—**'nā vīāiō sīn, for all that ;  
ar a sōn san, notwithstanding, etc., etc.

### 158.—Adverbial Clauses :—

1° Stereotyped :—pé scéat é, at all events ; pé'r  
vōman é, anyway ; vā mb'é fém é, even he.

2° pé cuma 'n-a bfuair sé é, however he got it ; pé  
āit 'nā ngeobāo, wherever I go ; vā luigeāo tu, ní  
leanb tu, you may be small, but you're no child.—Such  
clauses modify the main clause in the various ways set  
forth in 156.

### 159.— Notes on the Adverbs.

1° The prep. go (with) forms adverbs only with teor  
and léir. Otherwise go (=to) is used—go mór—to a  
great extent.

2° The spellings súas, síos, sóir, síar are erroneous.

3° téas (instead of v́eas) because of the frequent  
conjunction—tuairō 7 téas.

4° In ó tuairō, ó v́eas, ó is certainly *not* the prep. ó.  
It is either the prep. fo, or a form of the copula.  
O'imtíḡ sé san āirō fa tuairō (>ó tuairō), he went  
towards the point that was North.

5° 1stíḡ, amuíḡ, show the D., 1steac, amac, the A. of  
teac.

6° lasmuíḡ, and all the forms in 157 B. (b), except  
laistíḡ, derive their -s- from the latter=la-1stíḡ (la-  
being a weak form of leat, side).

7° arís < O.I. a fhrith-éssi, *his back-track*. Now used  
of both numbers and genders, and all three persons.

8° inoiu, D. of vīa, day, with art.

9° anoct, D. of noct (L. nox) with art.—*the* night.

10° vīa luam, vīa máirt, vīa céadāoin', vīarāoin,  
vīa n-āoine, vīa sačairn, vīa vōmnaíḡ, are adverbs—  
on Monday, etc. The noun forms are :—An luan, An  
máirt, An céadāoin, An vārdāoin, An āoine, An sačarn,  
An vōmnač.

11° leis, also, is sometimes used, in negative sen-  
tences, where we might rather expect ac cōm beas (ac  
an oireāo, U.). Dubairt sé ná raib sé ann, 7 ní raib,



1e1s—He said he wasn't there, and neither was he. South of Ireland English employs "too" in the same way :—A.—"You don't look well." B.—"I'm not, too." The "raison d'être" of the usage is the fact that such negative sentences are a *re-assertion* of the preceding negative statement.



## CHAPTER VII.

### CONJUNCTIONS.

**160.**—The **Conjunction** is the part of speech which is used to connect phrases, clauses, sentences, and co-ordinate words :—**Phrases** :—*bí sé ar meisge, ⁊ ar dearg-buile*—he was drunk *and* raging mad. **Clauses** :—*bí sé ar buile nuair a dúbairt sé an cáimnt sin*—he was mad *when* he said that. **Sentences** :—*bí a d'á cois briste. Dá b'riḡ sin, ní féadfaid sé siubal*—his two legs were broken, so he couldn't walk. **Words** :—*ṡánadair ḡo léir, roir ós ⁊ aosta*—They all came, young *and* old.

Conjunctions are either **co-ordinating**, or **subordinating**. The former connect clauses (phrases, words) of **equal grammatical rank**. The latter connect **dependent** clauses with the main clause.

**Co-ordinating Conjunctions** :—These are either :—(a) **Cumulative (Copulative)**, which *add* one statement to another. (b) **Adversative** :—which *set one statement against another*. (c).—**Illative (Inferential)**—which *point to a conclusion arrived at*.

#### (a) Copulative Conjunctions :—

1° *agus*, and (*as, is, 's*. Often *⁊*,—a contraction of *L.—et*).—*bí an saibhir 's an daibhir i ngrá leis (Eoḡan Cóir)*—Rich and poor were in love with him !

2° *roir . . . . agus*—both . . . . and.—*bí ceannsa le các, roir caraio ⁊ eascaraio*—Be gentle with all, both friend and enemy.

#### (b) Adversative Conjunctions :—

1° *nó*, else (or else).—*ní fuláir nó tá tuirse air*—he must be (a strong man) or else he's tired,



2° **Acc.**, but.—*Ní meisge pé n'oeár é, ac dearg-óiomhaoimceas*—Not intoxication caused it, but downright idleness.

(c) **Illative Conjunctions** :—*Óá bríḡ sin, therefore ; mar sin, so ; má's ead, so.*

### 161.—Subordinating Conjunctions :—

1° **Modal**—*pé cuma n'a bpuair sé í*—however he got it.

2° **Local**—*mar a raib an sagart*—where the priest was.

3° **Temporal**.—*sul a dtiocfaid an Domnác*—before Sunday comes.

4° **Causal**.—*nílir-se cionntac ann, ó nac tu a deim é*—you're not responsible, as you didn't do it.

5° **Final**.—(denoting purpose).—*sul a mbeinn déirdeanac. (S.)*—lest I should be late.

6° **Consecutive** (denoting result).—*tá oiread san ceana agam air gur dóic liom go n-íosad é (S.)*—I'm so fond of him that I think I'll eat him.

7° **Quantitative**—*is fearr an maic atá ná an dá maic do bí*—Present goods are twice as good as past ones.

8° **Concessive** :—*bíod go raib 'fios agam*—although I knew.

9° **Conditional** :—The clause containing the condition, is called the **Protasis**, that containing the conclusion, the **Apodosis**. *má, if*.—Implies that the condition is, was, will, or would be verified, or else leaves it an open question, implying neither non-fulfilment, nor serious doubt. It can be used :—

With **pres. Indic.**—*má tá sé ann, labrad sé*—if he's here, let him speak ; *má fágann tusa mé, is cuma mé nó na daill (lúc. 48)*—if you leave me, I'm no better than the blind.

With the **past Indic.**—*má táinig don droc-scéal, níor airigeas-sa é*—if bad news came, I didn't hear it.

With the **Fut.**—*má beid sé annso i mbáiread*—if he is here to-morrow.

With the **Impft.**—*má bíod sé ann*—if he was there (habitually).

With the **Condit.**—*má bead sé oireadinnac duit*—if it would suit you (as I'm sure it would !).—*Óá, if ;*—



- (a) Used in mod. I. only with past Subj. (or Condit.).  
 (b) The *time* referred to may be past, pres. or fut.  
 (c) The condition is either *unreal* (i.e., *not verified* in past or pres., or *not verifiable* in the fut.), or at least *very doubtful* :—

A.—**Actual pres.**—*Ṯá ṽṽṽṽṽṽ an saṽṽṽṽ anois*—if the priest were to come now.

B.—**Habitual pres.**—*Ṯ'ṽṽṽṽṽṽ é ṽṽṽṽṽṽ don uair ṽṽ mba mair liom é*—I could do it any time, if I wanted to.

C.—**Past.**—*Ṯá ṽṽṽṽṽṽ sé ann ṽṽṽ ṽṽ anuirṽṽ*—If he went there every day last year. (Impft.)—*Ṯá n-abraṽṽ sé* (CMO. 93), if He had said (Plupft.).

D.—**Fut.**—*Ṯá ṽṽṽṽṽṽ Seán i mbaireadṽ*—If S. were to come to-morrow.

*Muna, munar*, if not, unless (O.I. *mani*), the neg. of *má* :—

With the Pres. Indic. **actual** :—*muna ṽṽṽṽ sé annso*—if he is not here. Pres. Indic. **habitual** :—*muna mbíonn sé ṽṽṽ ann*—if he is not there himself (habitually).

**Pres. Hab. in future sense** :—*muna nṽṽṽṽṽṽ ruo orm* (lúc. 14)—If you do not do as I tell you. (Or *ṽṽṽṽṽṽ* may be pres. subj.).

With **past indic.**—*muna raibṽ sé ann*—if he wasn't there.

With the **Fut.**—*muna mberṽ ciail ṽṽṽṽ*—If you won't have sense.

With the **Impft.**—*muna ṽṽṽṽṽṽ sé i n-am*—If he didn't come (habitually) in time.

With the **Condit.**—*muna mbeaṽ Seán*—Only for S.

The neg. of *ṽṽ* is either *muna* (with Past Subj.) or *ṽṽ mba ná* (followed by the Condit.) :—1° *Ṯá mba ná beaṽ don cúis eile aicṽ* (CMO. 25)—If she had had no other reason. 2° *Ṯá mba ná beaṽ Ṯia ṽṽ caṽṽṽṽṽṽ ṽṽ ṽṽ ṽṽṽ*—If God were not always helping us. But note the difference between “*Ṯá mba ná*” and “*muna.*” E.g., in ex. 1° it is implied that *she had other reasons*. i.e.—the negative supposition “*ná beaṽ don cúis eile aicṽ*” is *unreal*. “*muna mbeaṽ*” would leave it an open question. So ex. 2° implying,



as it does, the *unreality* of the supposition “ná beaḁ Ḑia ḁḡ caḁrú linn ḁe síor,” virtually asserts the truth :—Ḑionn Ḑia ḁḡ caḁrú linn ḁe síor.

ḁḁḁ ḡo, provided that, if only (O.I. acht ro, with Subj.)—ḁḁ ná cuirḁí fearḡ uirḁí (S.), provided that she were not “riled.” Distinguish from :—(a) ḁḁ ḡo=when, until.—ḁḁḁ ḡo ḁḁáinḡ ná h-ḁllmúraḡ—until the foreigners came. (b) ḁḁḁ ḡo, except that—ḁḁḁ ḡo ḁḁáinḡ sé siúo isteḁḁ—except that that fellow came in.

10° **Demonstrative Conjunctions** :—ḡo, that, *lit.* until that, so that ; with ro>ḡur. This is the ordinary particle for *affirmative* indirect speech.—Ḑeir sé ḡo mberḁ sé ḁnnso i mbáireḁḁ—he says that he will be here to-morrow. It also introduces a noun-clause to act as subj. or pred. to “is,” or as appositional subject or object after other verbs :—As **subj.**—Ḑ’féroir ḡo ḁḁiocḁḁó sé moiu—Maybe he’d come to-day. As **pred.**—’Sé eaḡla ḁí orm ḡo ḁḁiocḁḁó—My fear was that he would come. As **object.**—Ḑeimrḁ é fḁḡairḁ ḡo ḡcuirḁar ḁn cime ḁum báis—Have it announced that the prisoner will be put to death.

The corresponding neg. conjunctions are ná, naḁ, náir :—(a) Ḑeir sé ná ḁiocḁḁó sé ḁ ḁuille—He says he won’t come any more. (b) Is ḁóic liomsa naḁ saḡart i n-ḁon cor é—I think he’s not a priest at all. (c) Ḑubart leis náir máic liom ḁul ḁnn—I told him I shouldn’t like to go.

### 11° Interrogative Conjunctions :—

(a) Ní fearḁar ḁn ḁḁiocḁḁó sé moiu—I wonder will he come to-day. Here ḁn not only *modifies* the clause—ḁiocḁḁó sé, but also *connects* the latter with ní fearḁar, thus uniting the functions of **adv.** and **conj.** So with the other *interrog.* adverbs (157 D) :—

(b) Is ḁeacair ḁ ráo caḁom ḁ ḁiocḁḁó sé—It is hard to say when he’ll come.

(c) Ní fíos ḁ’ḁoinne conus ḁ ḁeimeann sé é—No one knows how he does it.

(d) Ní ḁuḡim i n-ḁon cor caḁ ḁuḡe ḡur ḁeim sé é—I cannot understand why he did it.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### PREPOSITIONS.

**162.**—The **Preposition** is the part of speech that serves, with a noun, pronoun, or noun-equivalent to make up a qualifying phrase, either substantival, adjectival or adverbial (Syntax 303). Preps. are either simple or compound. A.—**Simple Prepositions** :—

1° Governing D.—*to*, to, for ; *oe*, from, off, of, etc. ; *ó*, from ; *Δ*, *Δs*, out of ; *Δs*, at, etc. (with prons. sometimes *partitive*—*curo Δsainn*, some of us) ; *ós*, above ; *so*, with (nearly obsolete) ; *roim*, before (O.I. *re*).

2° Governing the A. only (orig.) :—*te*, with, etc. ; *tre*, through ; *so*, to ; *um*, about, etc. ; *roir*, between (with D. in pl., *roir fearaib 7 mnáib*—both men and women) ; *amát*, as (now only with 3 sg. neut. suffixed pron.—*amtaró*, like this) ; *san*, without ; *seac*, past ; *tar*, over, beyond (and, in asseverations, *oár*).

3° Governing (orig.) D. or A.—*m*,—in (*rest*, D), into (*motion* A) ; *ar*, for, because of (now often “on”) ; *fé* (*fó*, *fá*, *foi*), under, towards, etc. ; *for*, on (now only used in compounds, like *formao*, *forlámas*, etc.).

In addition to the above, other simple preps. are found only in compounds (nouns, verbs, adjectives) :—

(a) *ad*, to, L. *ad*.—*atá* (L. *ad-stat*), *áram*, to count < *ao-ríom*.

(b) O.I. *cen* (= *san*) in *ceann-tar*, the district *on this side* (orig.).

(c) *eactar*, outside of—*eactrann*, *eactrannac*, foreigner.

(d) *fíao*, in presence of—*fíao-naise*—evidence.

(e) *frít*, *frí*, against—*freagra* (< *frith-gaire*), *frít-bualao*, repercussion.

(f) *iar*, after—*fíafriug*, enquire.

(g) *is*, under, and *ós* above—*íseal*, low, *uasal*, high, *tíos*, *túas*, etc. (*ós* also forms compd. preps.).



(h) ro (*L. pro*) with adjectives=too,—ró-máit.

(i) co, com=with,—cuibread, bond, etc., congnam, help (<gníom), etc.

Many *noun*-forms are used as preps. (with G.):—

(a) cum, to <to + céim> toicim, dochum, cum.

(b) óáitá, concerning—óáitá an scéil, “by the way.”

(c) toisc, because of (earlier oe toisc)—toisc a n-ingine, because of her daughter.

(d) timceall, around, about, timceall na h-áite—around the place.

(e) fan, along, during—fan an fálla, along the wall; fan na h-amsire, all the time (<ar fear na).

(f) cois—beside—cois na teme, na fairrge—beside the fire, by the sea.

(g) treasna, across—treasna na h-abann—across the river.

**B.—Compound Prepositions :—**I.—Simple prep. + noun (with G.). II.—Simple prep. + noun + simple prep. (with D. A. or G. according to circumstances).

**I.—Simple prep. + noun :—**

(a) m-áice, near—m-áice na teme, near the fire. So—m-ašarò, against; i gcionn, after; i scaiteam, during; i gcúrsaí, concerning; i n-ionad, instead of, and many others.

((b) ar ašarò, in front of—ar ašarò an dorais isteach—opposite the door (viewed from the *outside*). So—ar cúl—behind; ar son, for the sake of; ar fear—for the space of (*time*); ar fúro, ar fuaro, throughout (*space*), and many others.

(c) o'ionnsuròe, towards, against—o'ionnsuròe na Traoi—against Troy; oo réir, according to—oá réir sin—according to that.

(d) oe bárr—as a result of—oá bárr san—as a result of that; o'á bíctinn sin—because of that; o'á éis sin—after that.

(e) as uct—for the sake of; as uct oo ceannsaácta—for the sake of your mildness.

(f) pé óem, towards, for; pé bun—under, less than.



(g) le n-aḡarò, for, with a view to—le n-a. an tsamhrad—  
—in preparation for Summer ; le n-aís, le cois—beside;  
le n-eaḡla na heaḡla—“ to make assurance doubly sure.”

(h) ós cionn, over—ós a cionn, over it, more ; ós mo  
cómair amac—in front of me ; ós comne a n-éadán—  
before their faces.

(i) tréis (<tar éis), after—tréis an tsaoḡail—after  
all ; tar ceann do sláinte—for your health's sake.

## II.—Simple prep.+noun+simple prep :—

(a) 1 n-aice le, near—surò annso 1 n-aice liom—sit  
here near me ; 1 scomórtas le, 1 scóimneas le—com-  
pared with ; 1 ngeall le—in pledge for.

(b) 1 bponn cum—in humour for (with G.) ; 1 bfeirs  
cum—angry with.

(c) mar ḡeall ar—because of ; mar bárr ar—to cap.

(d) 1 nḡar do—near ; 1 nḡiorraḡt do—near.

(e) laistiar de, behind ; lastoir de—East of.

(f) 1 bḡao ó—far from.



## CHAPTER IX.

### INTERJECTIONS.

**163.**—The **Interjection** is the part of speech used to express some sudden emotion, or to give some direction :

(a) *Amen*, so be it ! *Διττιύ*, *Phew* ! *Διρὲ μῦσε*, *Well, well* ! *Δμ βάσα, ι mbaiste*—*Indeed* ! *Ὁαρ φιάδ, Ὁαρφα ιιατ*, *Egad* ! (Minced forms of “*By God* !”). *Δσδομ*, *Indeed* ! (< *is ὁδῖς* + *init. n* of following word). *μῦσε*, *Well* ! (from *μῦρε*). *φέαδ*, *Lo* ! *Look here* ! (even when addressing more than one). *Μο βρόν, μο λέαν, μο λέαν γέαρ, μο ἐρεαδ γ μο κάς, φόιριρ, Αλας* ! *ἔιστ*, *Hush* ! *ὕδ, υδόν, υδόν διρὲ, μο τρυαδ*, *Alas* ! *Μο τρυαδ ἐράριτε, α μῦρε is τρυαδ*, *Alas and alack* ! *Δρ αδαρὸ λιθ, Ον* ! *ιστεαδ τεατ*, *In you go* !

(b) Sometimes a noun with the article is used, out of construction, with the force of an interjection :—*Is ἀμλάρὸ α βί sé . . . . γά ἐεπαδὸ γο μαίρρεαδ sé γο νεο, αν τ-αμαδάν* ! (*Luc. 45*)—*The fact was, he imagined he'd live for ever, the fool* !

(c) Many *clauses* given in Grammars as Interjections can hardly be regarded as such. *E.g.*—*γο οτείγρὸ τῦ σλάν α βάιτε*—*Safe home* ; *Σλάν νεο αδατ*—*Good-bye* ; *ἔιστ νο βέατ*—*Silence* ! *γο mbeannuigrò Ὀια ὀυιτ*—*God save you, Good morning, etc.* *γο mbuanuigrò Ὀια ἐυ*—*May God give you long life ; thank you* !



## PART III.

### CHAPTER I.

#### SYNTAX OF THE ARTICLE.

164.—(a) The art. always precedes its noun, and *usually* agrees with it in gender and number; *always* in case :—*an* τ-υβαιι—the apple (M. sg. N. or A. or absolute) ; *an* βεαν—the woman (F. sg. N.A. or abs.) ; *na* η-υβια (M. pl. N.A. or abs.) ; *na* μνά—the women (F. pl. N.A. or abs.).

(b) The M. sg. *an* τ- is used in N.A. before *don*, *don*-*μά*ο, *ο*ύτμάο, even if the noun is F.—*An* τ-*don* *ά*ιτ *ά*μάιη *sa* *το*μαη (CMO. 72)—the one spot in the world ; *An* τ-*don* βεαν *ά*μάιη—the only woman ; *an* τ-*o*ύτμάο βιιαιη—the 8th year. In G. *an* (M.) and *na* η- (F.) are used :—*μα*ροβεαν *an* *o*ύτμάο *lae* (CMO. 302)—the morning of the 8th day ; *mac* *na* η-*don*μάο *μ*νά *ο*έας—the 11th woman's son.

(c) The sg. art. is used with pl. noun, if the latter is felt as a unity :—*τ*αςαρο *don* *lá* *is* *ma*ιτ *ti*β *ο*e'n *se* *lá* *san* (CMO. 330)—Come any day of the six that you like ; *an* *na*οι *ς*οιμο *ο*έας *γ* *ce*ιτre *fi*οιο (CMO. 340)—The ninety-nine.

(d) When a noun, not followed by a demonstrative adj., governs a definite noun in the G., the whole expression is usually definite, but the art. is not used with the 1st noun :—*ο*ά *mb'*é *leat* *mo* *ri*ςeαςτα *é* (B.N. 624)—Were it even the half of my Kingdom. *ο*όταρ *na* *μ*ιας—the Road of the Dishes. But when this is *nominal*, not *real*, it is indefinite. *ο*eιρ *se* *ς*ur *ο*όταρ *na* *μ*ιας *α* *τ*υςταρ *α*ιρ—He says it is called “The Road of the



Dishes." But—*is é bótar na mias do gabhadar an lá san*—It was "the Road of the Dishes" they took that day.

(e) If a demonstrative follows the 1st noun, the art. is used :—*An mac so mo deirbhéar* (TBC. 129)—This sister's son of mine ; *ameasg na gcnoc san Samaria* (CMO. 296)—amid those hills of S.

(f) N.B.—*Ingean tairg*—T.'s daughter (implies that he has only one) ; *ingean do t.*—a daughter of T. (he having at least one other).

(g) Even when the meaning is *real*, the 1st noun may be indefinite. Thus Canon O'Leary wrote—*Dá mba leat mo rígeadta é* (C.S.)—were it *a* half of my Kingdom (Cf. d. where it is definite). If the *particular half* were specified, we should say—*an leat so dem' rígeadta*. So *taob an bótar*, may refer to either side. But—*do druir sé cum an taob eile de'n bótar* (CMO. 317)—He moved to the other side of the road.

(h) When both nouns are indefinite, the art. is not used :—*Ceann capaill*—a horse's (not a cow's, or dog's) head ; *ceann caite*—a cat's head ; *ceann circe*—a hen's head ; *clóc reata*—a rolling stone.

(i) The 1st noun may be definite, the 2nd indefinite :—*An ceann capaill sin*—that *horse's head* : But—*ceann an capaill sin*—that *horse's head*. In the first ex. *capaill* has the force of an adj. *Is cuma nó an clóc reata é*—He's as bad as a rolling stone.

(j) The exx. in (h) and (i) show the G. of *possession* or *quality*. It may also denote the *material*, or *contents* of what is denoted by the 1st noun ; or it may express a *whole* of which the governing noun denotes a *part*. (The Partitive G.). Thus :—1° Both nouns *indefinite* :—**Material** :—*áran mine coirce*—oatmeal bread. **Contents** : *glome fíona*—a glass of wine. **Partitive** :—*braon uisge*—a drop of water. 2° 1st n. definite, 2nd indefinite :—**Material** :—*an t-áran mine coirce seo*—this oatmeal bread. **Contents** :—*an glome fíona*—the glass of wine. **Partitive** :—*an braon uisge*—the drop of water.

(k) Both nouns definite, but *never in partitive meaning* : **Material** :—*meabóg na mme*—the meal-bag. **Contents** :—



glóine an fíona—the wine-glass (though it be empty).  
**Partitive** :—Ordinarily partitive *de* (with D.) is substituted for G.—*mo cion de'n oigreachta* (CMO. 325)—my share of the inheritance ; *cuid de sna h-uaisliú*—some of the nobles : *cuid na n-uasal*=the nobles' property (where the G. is possessive, not partitive).

(l) *leat mo rígeachta* seems to be against this rule. But, when the 1st noun is made clearly definite, and *the particular half is specified*, the G. construction is dropped, and partitive *de* (with D.) substituted :—*An leat tuaró dem' rígeacht*—the northern half of my Kingdom. In 164 (d) *the half* is contrasted, not with *the other half*, but with *the whole*.

(m) *Tosaí, deiread, lár, bruaí, cois*, and such words, may also be followed by a definite G., though the meaning seems to be partitive :—*Tosaí an Earraí*—the beginning of Spring. *Deiread an tsamraí*—the end of Summer. *Lár an fómhair*—the middle of Autumn. *Bruaí na h-abann*—the river's edge. *Cois na fairrge*—the sea-side.

(n) The following exx. from U.I. violate the rule laid down in (d) above :—

1° *Iarraim-sa, mar atcuinge ort, cár coidil tusa aréir, a síúr,*

*In-Éirinn nó i dtalam na bflaites míc Dé na n-óul* (C.C.U. 100)—

I ask, and beg you answer, where slept you, sister, yesternight,

In I., or in the land of the Kingdom of the Son of God of the elements.

2° *'Sí an t-Samail a' réal eolais críoíca fóbla mur tóire* (C.C.U. 130)—

Sawell (a mountain) is the guiding-star of the territory of F., your land.

3° *'S dá scríofrúe mo sgéal ba liom féin an Condae Muig Eo* (C.C.U. 83)—

And if my tale were credited, the Co. of M. were mine.

These exx. may be looked upon as archaic.

(o) *An tsaoílan cáitce an taoib slím* (Haic. 9)—The stately maiden of the slender body (This is *early modern*).



(p) When the def. G. is virtually an adj., the 1st noun may have the article :—*Cao é an uair a' cluig é?* —What time is it? *An Coróinn Múire*—the Rosary.

(q) The art. is *usually omitted* :—1° In Type II. Ident. vb. is :—*Sé cúis ná h-éistean siúse le briatraithe*—This is *the* reason why ye listen not to God's words. 2° In Type I. with predicates like the following :—*Sé ruo é is éasamlaiqe . . . . . dár airigeas fós*—It's *the* strangest thing I've ever heard. 3° Also in Type VII.—*Sim é scéal 's fearr a táinig cúgamn fós* (TBC. 122-3)—That's the best news we've had yet. 4° After proper names, before name of a trade, profession, occupation ; and sometimes before a proper name when followed by a demonstrative :—*Amórias Mac Craic, file*—The poet, A. McC. *Taós gada*—T. the smith. is *iongantac an bean méib seo*—This M. is a wonderful woman.

165.—The def. article in I. where E. either has none at all, or else the indef. art :—

1° Before noun and demonstrative :—*An fear so, an bean san, na neite úo* (But see last ex. above).

2° In interrog. sentences like—*Cao é an ruo é sim?* —What is that? But *not* with *cia'cu*, when *cia* is an adj.—*Cia'cu ceann ab' fearr leat*—Which one would you prefer? So the art. is absent in—*Cé méro*, how much? *Ca n-aic*, where, whither, whence? *Ca n-uair*, when? and wherever the interrog. forms a compound with the noun, e.g., *conus, canao*.

3° Before *uite*, every, when not preceded by *gac*—*an uite cátair*—every city (*an cátair uite*=the whole city).

4° In Type III, Classification sentences, where E. has the indef. art.—*Is deas an buacail tu*—You're a nice boy!

5° Before titles (exc. in V. of course)—*an t-átair peadar ó laogaire*—Fr. P. O'L.

6° In certain expressions of time :—*moe*, yesterday ; *nuair*, when ; *anois*, now ; *i mbliadóna*, this year ; *anuirtó*, last year ; *an tráit, an tan*=when. In *moiu*, *i mbáiread, umanoirtear*—to-day, to-morrow, the day after to-morrow, E. has the art. as well.



7° In the names of the days of the week, when *nouns*, and not followed by a def. G.—An luan, Monday. But Dia luan, on M.

8° In—An t-Earrac, an Samrad, an fósmar, an Seimread—Spring, Summer, Autumn, Winter. Except when used as adjectives (in G.)—lá samrad, oíche seimríd—a summer day, a winter night.

9° In—An Eanáir, an Feabhra, an Márta, an t-Aibreán, an Bealtaine, an Meiteam, an t-lúl, mí na Samna, mí na Nollag—Jan., Feb., March, Apr., May, June, July, Nov., Dec. But not when they are used adjectivally—lá Márta, a March day (meaning is *indefinite*), Oíche Samna—Halloweve.

10° In distributive phrases like :—Seobair sib pinginn an tume—You shall receive each a penny ; coróinn an ceann—5s. apiece.

11° In nouns used as *abstracts*, or in a *general* sense:—An fíoróne, patience ; ainm an airgid, a reputation for riches ; an tume, man (in general).

12° In names of virtues and vices, in a general sense:—an tóruis, unchastity ; an t-ólaán, intemperance (in drink).

13° With *concrete* words, used to denote a class :—Ói an saróbir 's an daírbir i ngrád leis—Rich and poor were in love with him.

14° With certain surnames, when the Christian name is absent :—an Brianaic, Mr. O'Brien ; an Breatnaic, Mr. Walsh.

15° With names of certain countries, cities, rivers, etc.—An Róm, Rome ; an Eibéis, Switzerland ; an Aifric, Africa ; an fRann, France ; an Spáinn, Spain ; an tSorca, Sweden ; an Ioruaí, Norway ; Éire, Ireland ; G. usually na h-Éireann, but also Éireann :—fíor Éireann, the men of I. So, with Alba ; an Neróin, Kenmare ; na Gleannatái, Glenties ; an Suagán, Gougane Barra ; an Gaillim, Galway ; an Donac (D), Nenagh ; an fEoir, the river Nore, etc., etc.

16° With the names of things *unique* (sometimes) :—an t-Aifreann naomta, Holy Mass ; but Aifreann Dé, in accordance with 164 (d) ; na fLaitis, Heaven : but fLaitis Dé ; an Caras, an Cáisc, an Cingcís, an Inro,



an noṽlaṽ—Lent, Easter, Pentecost, Shrovetide, Xmas. But often without art.—la noṽlaṽ, Xmas Day, Oṛōce noṽlaṽ, Xmas Eve ; Oṛōce lae noṽlaṽ, Xmas Night, etc., etc.

17° Instead of a G. pers. pron., a D. pron. is sometimes used, and the article is used with the noun :—Conus τά an τslámte aṽat ? How is your health ? Oo vris an an vporōne aṽam—My patience became exhausted ; oo ḡearr sí an cṛorōe acu (CMO. 299)—it lacerated their hearts.

18° In expressing large numbers or quantities :—na céaṽta, hundreds ; na táimte, crowds ; na mílte, thousands ; na cianta, ages ; an iomaṽ, an iomarca, too much, too many.

19° With names of languages (sometimes) :—an ḡaeṽilṽ, an véarla, an laṽom, an ḡréiṽis—I., E., L., Gk.

166.—Vivid use of art.—To express certain emotions such as surprise, joy, pathos, fright, etc. :—1° Cao oo cípinn os mo cómaṽr amac ac an ḡallán !—There I saw in front of me—a pillar-stone ! (fear, excitement). 2° Tá an lá aṽamn !—We are victors ! (joy). 3° Táro na táimte aṽ faḡáil báis ve'n ocraṽ—Thousands are dying of hunger (pathos).

Here we may place the exclamatory or interjectional use of art. and noun ; and a certain use of the art. before ordinal numerals :—1° an τ-amaṽán ! ḡ a céapaṽ ḡo noéanpamn a teitéro !—Fool that he was, to think I should do such a thing ! 2° Veir an tríomaṽ oume ḡurb amlaró a fuaras airḡeao aṽ oul amúṽa—A third fellow suggests that I found lost money !



## CHAPTER II.

### SYNTAX OF THE NOUN.

**167.**—The n. is that part of speech whereby any object or property existing in, or presented to, the mind is expressed by itself alone :—*féar, bean, meisce, macán-táct*—man, woman, intoxication, honesty.

Use of the cases :—**The Nominative** :—The cases are the forms which nouns assume to express their relations to other words in the sentence. The N. denotes :—

(a) **The Subject** :—*‘Do buail Seán é*—S. struck him ; *‘do deimead brúscar de*—it was crumbled (Passive).

(b) **The Predicate** :—*is sagart é sin*—that is a priest ; *is í céad céist ‘do cuiread air, ná cér’ ‘dib é*—the first question put to him was who was he. (Here the pred. n. is *complex*—the clause—*cér’ ‘dib é*).

(c) **The Projected N.**—Used at the beginning, when the speaker has not quite formed the sentence in his mind ; or when, for rhetorical or other reason, it is deliberately put first. *E.g.*, *Dominus in caelo sedes ejus* (Ps. x. 5)—The Lord’s throne is in heaven. When thus projected, the N. *form* is often *absolute*.

(d) **The Virtual N.**

**168.**—**The Projected N.**—1° *An té a tiocfaid cūgamsa nī berō ocraḡ air* (CMO. 261)—He who comes to Me shall not hunger (*an té*, absolute). 2° *An té a ‘ ‘ iteann mise berō sé beo ‘dem’ bárr-sa* (CMO. 262)—He that eateth Me shall live by Me (*an té*, N.). 3° *An té ná berō ciall aige, berō cuimne aige* (Des.)—He who will not have “reason” shall have “reason to remember” (*an té*, absolute). 4° *An ruo nac ‘bpuil itte nó goiote, geobtar é*—What is not eaten or stolen will be found (UP.—*an ruo*, N., if *geobtar* is taken as Pass.).

**169.**—**The Virtual N.**—1° *‘bí eagla air ‘out léi* (CMO. 253)—He was afraid to go with her. *‘Out* is here *virtual*



N., i.e., it is N. because of two other constructions, conveying the same meaning, in which *out* is **actually** N. :—(a) *b'eaḡat leis out léi*. (b) *Ċuir sé eaḡla air out léi*. This is always the case where *effect* and *cause* are simply juxtaposed, without one saying in so many words, that the one *is* the cause of the other. 2° *Ĭi ionḡna orċa a ráð nár fēaðaðar é fāḡáil lastoir* (CMO. 259)—They were surprised to think they could not find Him East. (ráð, virtual N.). 3° *Ĭi leisge orm teaċt lem' ḡnó beaḡ fēm aḡ cur isteaċ ort* (TBC. 134)—I was loth to come and disturb you with my own little worry. (teaċt, virtual N.).

### 170.—Apposition :—

A.—**Grammatical** :—1° *b'sm é aċair ċomáis uí nuallám*—That was T. O'N.'s father. 2° *a šeám uí séaḡða*—S. O'Shea (V.). 3° Common in O.I. after proleptic *a* :—a masse in chuirp—the beauty of the body. 4° *fā clann do šarōb mḡm ċuinn an triúr* (FF. Bk. 1, 272)—The three were children of S. Conn's daughter. In these exx. *ċomáis uí* ; *šeám uí* ; a . . . . in chuirp ; *šarōb mḡm*, are in **grammatical** apposition.

B.—**Logical** (only) :—1° *Ĭi a fīos aḡam é* (lúc. 41)—I knew it well. 2° *īomáis pōil apstai* (E.S. 26)—The image of the Apostle Paul. 3° When a noun preceded by a title is used, the title only is inflected :—(a) *a aċair peaðar*—Fr. P. (Voc.). *peaðar* is **absolute**. (b) *leaðair an aċar peaðar ó laoḡaire*—Fr. P. O'Leary's books. [*aċar*, G. ; *peaðar*, **abs.**, and *ó* (in *grammat. appos.*) **abs.** also]. (c) So, when the title *follows* the name, the *title* is not inflected :—*aḡus ainm Ĭictória ċamríoḡam šasana fāoi* (Smb. 130)—With V. the Q. of E's name under it. (*ċamríoḡam abs.*).

C.—**Apposition to a sentence** :—1° *Ĭi átas air, níð nárō ionḡna*—Naturally, he was glad. Here “*níð nárō ionḡna*” is in *appos.* to “*Ĭi átas air*,” and *níð* is best explained as **virtual N.** 2° *Ruð is measa ná san fēm, is contaḡrċaċ an ara iad* (TBC. 19)—Worse still, they're a dangerous lot ! *Ruð*, **virtual N.**

D.—**Partitive Apposition** :—A *part* is placed loosely in *apposition to the whole* :—1° *Ĭemro siad, an ċuro is*



mó acu, ar an gcuma san é—They do it like that—the most of them. The apposition is **corrective**, toning down a too general statement. Curo, virtual N. 2° Do daoraó an cúro eile, gac re roume acu, cum báis—The others were condemned to death—every second man of them.

E.—**Prepositional Apposition**:—1° C1a'cu 'de'n 'dā céann is fearr leat?—Which of the two do you prefer? Acu is proleptic, 'de'n 'dā céann being its term, and this is **prepositional** apposition. C1a 'de'n 'dā céann would suffice **logically**, but c1a'cu . . . is usual. 2° C1a'cu aḡamn-ne, c1a'cu aḡaib-se, and even c1a'cu acu san—Which of us, you, them?

171.—**Absolute Construction**:—The N. forms of nouns and pronouns are often *not* N. in *function*. This occurs when, logically, the meaning involved is that of G. D. A. or V., and usage allows none of them:—

1° In the “Bracketed Construction” (179) where the first noun (or pronoun) resists inflection, **the phrase being taken as a unit**; or, if the phrase is a noun-adj. one, the adj. at any rate resists inflection:—(a) Toisc (an saibbreas go léir a beic aige) (G. 4)—Because he was so wealthy; an saibbreas, abs. the **phrase** G.

(b) Ar fear (ramnt beas aimsire) (bn. 710)—For some little time.—ramnt beas, abs.—the **phrase** (a **complex n.**) G. (c) 7 ceao (tarang as) (S. 20)—with permission to withdraw the money.—tarang, abs.—the **phrase**, G. (d) 1 gcaiteam (oireao 7 don lá amám) (Im. 118)—For even a single day. oireao, abs.—**phrase**, G. (e) Dubairt sé le (gac bean oioð) (br. 21)—He told each of the women. (f) Tá tosaic aḡat ortá go léir ac ar (Site beas) (S. 18)—You're before them all, except little S. (g) timpal (an trimaó n-uair), (CS. 55)—About the third hour. (h) a (solas an tsolais síorurde) (Im. 271)—Thou light of everlasting light.

2° Cum (to) and tréis (after) do not inflect a vb. n. preceded by proleptic a:—(a) Tréis a ráo go dtiocfa (TBC. 188)—having said that you would come. (b) Tánas annso cum a iarrat ar Oia . . . (ḡ. 42)—I came here to ask God. . . . (c) In the same circumstances do' iarrat



leaves the vb. n. uninflected :—*ná bí ad' iarraio á cur 'na luige orm sur tu an saḡart*—Don't try to convince me that you are the priest.

3° The term of proleptic *á, oe, acu, etc.*, is abs., except in the case of prep. appos., and the cases mentioned in 216 :—(a) *ṭá á fíos ḡam é.*—*é* abs. (b) *fás fúmsa á tuisḡint cao é an saḡas aristotelés* (Lúc. 36)—Leave it to me to judge what sort A. was. (c) *ní fearr oe tu é*—You're nothing the better of it.—*é* abs. (d) *Cia'cu an cáṭaoir nó an mím nó an t-uball ba deas?* (S. 6)—Was it the chair, or the meal, or the apple that was nice? *caṭaoir, mím, uball*, abs.

4° Wherever there is **logical** without grammatical apposition :—See 170, B.—There is a word used absolutely in every one of the exx. given there. Thus :—In 1° *é* ; in 2° *apstai* ; in 3° *peaoar*, etc.

5° The Projected N. forms given in 168 are often not N. syntactically, and must then be taken as abs.—This is the case in exx. 1° and 3°.

6° After “*is fíú*”=is worth :—*Óir is fíú an fear oibre é cotú* (CMO. 246)—For the labourer is worthy of his food.—*é*, abs.

7° *An té* is abs. in sentences like the following :—*ba mór an t-uatbás é, an té á cípeao é*—It was a very dreadful sight, had one seen it.

**172.—Sense Construction** :—1° *Cao é an bac atá oraimn mteact láitread?* (Lúc. 42)—What is there to prevent us from going away at once? *Cao é an bac atá oraimn*=*nac ceaoiḡte úimn*, or *ná fuil sé ceaoiḡte ḡaimn*, either of which would be followed by the N. *mteact* (this being, therefore, in the orig. sentence **virtual N.**). Or one might render the sense by—*cao á comeaopao sinn ḡan. . . ?*—In which case the orig. *mteact* would be virtual A. 2° Exx. like—*beao eagla orm out istead*, can be justified on the same principle of “**Sense Construction.**” 3° *Oob' uasal an tseisear iao* (TBC. 2)—They were a noble Six (Meadhbh is here referring to herself and her five sisters. *Seisear* (M.) is therefore treated as F.). 4° *á roḡa bean*=*don bean ba roḡa leis*—any woman he chose.



## 173.—The Genitive :—

A.—The Possessive G. (with various shades of meaning)

1° Possession or ownership :—(a) *Trí pícead, cúig deas*—23, 15 (lit. 20's 3 ; 10's 5). (b) *leabhar Seáin*—S.'s book (He owns, or possesses it). 2° Made by :—*Amráin 7 Dánta an Céitinnis*—Keating's Poems. 3° Representing :—*Íomáig póil Apstail (K.)*—a statue of the A.P. 4° Commemorating :—*Sráro Uí Conaill*—O'Connell St. 5° Remarkable for :—*Coill na Lon*—The Wood of the Blackbirds (in Tyrone). 6° Partitive :—*Searr-curo airgro*—a tidy sum of money.

N.B.—The partitive G. is *not* used :—(a) With pronouns. Partitive *as*, or *de* (with D.) are used instead :—*an curo díob*—those of them ; *cia'cu acu?*—which of them ? Except in—*a bfuirmór, a leath, a trían*—the most of them, the half of it (them), the third of it—and similar phrases. (b) With Compar. and Superl.—*Sé tadh is fearr de'n beirt*—T. is the better of the two ; *an té is fearr ortha go léir*—the best of them all. (c) With numerals :—*An dara dume de'n dream*—The 2nd one of the lot ; *an pícead curo de*—the 20th part of it. (d) With the Numeral Substantives, unless the G. is indefinite :—Thus we say :—*beirt fear, seisear ban*—two men, six women. (These are, perhaps, not partitive, but appositional or explanatory). But—*beirt de sna fearaib, seisear de sna mnáib*—Two of the men, six of the women. (e) Outside the classes of exx. in—a definite partitive G. is not permissible. Hence :—1° *slua de daoimib bocta na cathaé (CMO. 57)*—Crowds of the city poor. 2° *a lán de dántaib an file sin*—many of that poet's "dánta."

B.—The G. of Quality :—Denotes some quality or characteristic of what is denoted by the governing noun :—1° *Ba mise croíde na féile acu, oróce 7 lá* (Song)—I was "the heart of hospitality" with them day and night. 2° *mná fuasála*—seamstresses. 3° *scian coise dubhe (S.)*—a black-handled knife. 4° *oróce seaca*—a frosty night.

C.—The Subjective (Active) G.—(a) The subjective G. is, properly speaking, that which denotes the agent of



the action implied by the governing word :—1°  $\zeta\rho\acute{\alpha}\theta$   $\theta\acute{\epsilon}$ —the love of God (which God has for us). 2°  $1s$   $be\acute{a}\varsigma$   $\acute{e}$   $sum$   $na$   $n\theta\alpha oine$   $sin$   $sa$   $n\zeta\alpha o\iota un$ —Those people take but little interest in I. (b) Although the G. in (a) is active, since it represents the agent, the name **Active G.** is sometimes given to the G. of the vb. n. itself used actively :—1°  $Ce\alpha\rho\theta$   $\theta\acute{e}\alpha n\tau\alpha$   $c\rho o\acute{c}\acute{a}n$   $\zeta c\rho i\alpha\theta$  (K.)—An artificer of earthen pots. 2°  $Ca\iota l\acute{i}n$   $\theta e\alpha s$   $c\rho\acute{u}r\theta\epsilon$   $na$   $m\acute{b}\acute{o}$ —the pretty milk-maid.

D.—The **Objective (Passive) G.**—Denotes the object of the action implied by the governing word, and is therefore also called **passive** :—1°  $\Delta\rho$   $\zeta\rho\acute{\alpha}\theta$   $\theta\acute{\epsilon}$ —For the love of God (i.e., which *we feel* for God). 2°  $\Delta n$   $\alpha\mu\lambda\alpha\iota\theta$   $ba$   $\mu\alpha\iota\tau$   $le\alpha\tau$   $\theta o$   $\theta\acute{i}-\acute{c}e\alpha nna\theta$   $\alpha no\acute{c}\tau$  ?—Can you possibly wish to be beheaded to-night?

E.—The **Appositional G.**—Sometimes used instead of a n. in apposition. Cf. L. *urbs Roma*, I.— $Ca\tau\alpha\iota\rho$   $na$   $R\acute{o}ma$ —the city of Rome.

F.—The **Explanatory G.**—Akin to E.—1°  $R\acute{i}nnce\theta i\rho$   $m\acute{n}\acute{a}$ —a female dancer. 2°  $\theta\acute{u}b\acute{a}i\iota ce$   $na$   $\theta r\acute{u}ise$ —the vice of impurity.

G.—The **G. of Time** :—1°  $\zeta\acute{a}\acute{c}\alpha$   $bl\acute{i}\alpha\theta na$ ,  $\zeta\acute{a}\acute{c}\alpha$   $m\acute{i}os\acute{a}$ ,  $\zeta\acute{a}\acute{c}\alpha$   $ma\rho ne$ —Every year, month, morning. Common in K. Orig. partitive, arising out of such phrases as,  $l\acute{a}$   $\zeta\acute{a}\acute{c}\alpha$   $bl\acute{i}\alpha\theta na$ . 2° In  $\theta i\acute{a}$   $\theta o mna\acute{i}\varsigma$ , etc., we have an old G. of time, from the noun  $\theta i\acute{a}$ , *die*=day.

H.—The **G. of Purpose** :—An extension of the terminal meaning of the G. after  $\acute{c}um$  :—1°  $\acute{C}um$   $bl\acute{a}\tau$   $Cl\acute{i}\alpha\tau$   $is$   $e\alpha\theta$   $\theta o$   $\acute{c}u\alpha\theta\alpha\rho$ —It was to D. they went. 2°  $\acute{C}um$   $na$   $n\theta\alpha oine$   $\theta o$   $\acute{s}a\theta\rho\alpha\theta$   $is$   $e\alpha\theta$   $\theta o$   $\acute{c}\acute{a}n\acute{a}\varsigma$ —I have come to save the people. Cf. the early use of E. *for*, and Fr. *pour* before infinitives :—I have come *for* to save the people. Je suis venu *pour* sauver le peuple.

I. G. of **Cause or Origin**.— $u\acute{a}i\varsigma ne\alpha s$   $\theta o$   $m\acute{n}\acute{a}$  (P.S. 13)—loneliness (arising from loss) of your wife ;  $u\acute{b}$   $c\acute{i}rce$ —a hen-egg ;  $s\acute{i}c\acute{i}n\acute{i}$   $ce\alpha\rho c$ —chickens ;  $bu\acute{i}le$   $\mu e\acute{i}r\zeta e$ —raging frenzy.

J.—G. of **Material**.— $ca\tau\alpha\theta i\rho$   $\acute{s}\acute{u}\zeta\acute{a}m$ —a “soogawn” chair ;  $ca\rho n$   $cl\acute{o}c$ —a heap of stones ;  $b\acute{o}r\theta$   $\alpha\theta ma\rho$ —a wooden table ;  $\rho\acute{o}\tau$   $i\alpha\rho am$ —an iron wheel ;  $\mu onna$   $\mu\acute{r}\acute{a}is$ —a brazen fillet ;  $m\acute{a}l\alpha$   $m\acute{i}ne$ —a bag of meal ;



sac plúir—a sack of flour. The last two exx. are G. of Material Contained—the contents.

The G. is not used after participles, or other adjectives, except when the latter are used as nouns :—*bíod' truaḡ aḡat do b'c'taib' Dé*—Have pity for God's poor.

**174.—The Dative :—**The D. does duty also for the Ablative, Instrumental and Locative cases :—D.—*tabair déirc d'í*—Give her an alms. Abl.—*i b'as ó baile*—far from home. Instr.—*le buille (de) clárdeam*—with a sword-thrust. Loc.—*sa baile*—at home : *sa Róm*—in Rome.

The D. is used :—1° Without a prep.—*marom*—in the morning (also *ar marom*) ; *feasda*, henceforward (O.I. *ind fecht sa*=now) ; *inniu*, to-day ; *anoct*, to-night (O.I. *in-nocht*=the night) ; *an f'as*, whilst ; *nuaig*, *trát*, when. These are all D. of time. *fé* (in *fé mar*) is a modal D.

2° With certain preps. (as set forth in 162). For the case of pronouns after preps., see 116.

The D. expresses :—(a) Possession :—*ta leabhar aḡ Seán*—S. has a book. (The G. may denote either possession or ownership). (b) Ownership (with *le*, and A. of pronouns).—*lám liom*, a hand of mine ; *is le Seán é*, it is Sean's ; *ní f'eadair cos léi cao a d'éanfao lám léi* (S.)—Not “a foot of her” knows what “a hand of her” will do. (c) The subjective view, with *is* and *le* ; the objective fact with *is* and *do* :—*is maic liom tae ac ní maic dom é*—I like tea but it isn't good for me ; *ní féoir liom*,—I don't think it possible ; *ní féoir dom*,—It is not possible for me. (d) Advantage and disadvantage :—*Dem ruo ar do má'tair*—obey your mother ; *is salaac a d'eimis le Seán é*—you treated S. scurvily. (e) The indirect object—*tabair do Liam é*—give it to William ; *ar n-arán laet'eamail tabair dúinn inniu*—Give us this day our daily bread. (f) The agent (with *do*)—*ar mbeic aḡ triall i n-éirinn do Com gCulaimn* (f.f.)—When C.C. was proceeding to I. (eclipsis after Com is irregular) ; *ní gearánta do lit*—L. needn't complain. (g) Local relation :—*i gCorcaig atá sé anois*—He's in Cork now ; *bí sé ar an donac inné*—he



was at the fair yesterday ; *is ó Corcaig dom*—I'm from Cork. (h) Various relations, after verbs, before and after nouns, and after adjectives and participles (see 305-6). (i) Mode, condition, instrument :—*le congnam Dé*, with God's help ; *ar meisce*, intoxicated ; *o'don gnó*—on purpose ; *ar gealaig* (bn. 617), like a lunatic ; *ar luas* (bn. 639), speedily. (j) Reason, purpose :—*ar an adubar san*—for that reason ; *ar a usáct a bí sé*—considering how easy it was. (k) Measurement :—*oá fáro an lá is eáó is giorra an oíóe*—the longer the day the shorter the night.

“*Oo cómaiseas mo pic is mo pota 's mo cárt  
le pic is le pota 's le cárt mná an márgaíó—  
óá mó iáó mo pic is mo pota óe cárt  
ná pic agus pota 'sus cárt mná an márgaíó.*”  
(Riddle)

“I measured my peck and my pot and my quart with those of the market-woman ; my peck and pot were larger by a quart, than the m-w.'s peck and pot and quart.”—(So the difference between the two sets of measures was two quarts). There is a variant :—

*óá mó iáó mo pic is mo pota óe pic is óe pota  
ná pic 7 pota 7 cárt mná an márgaíó !*

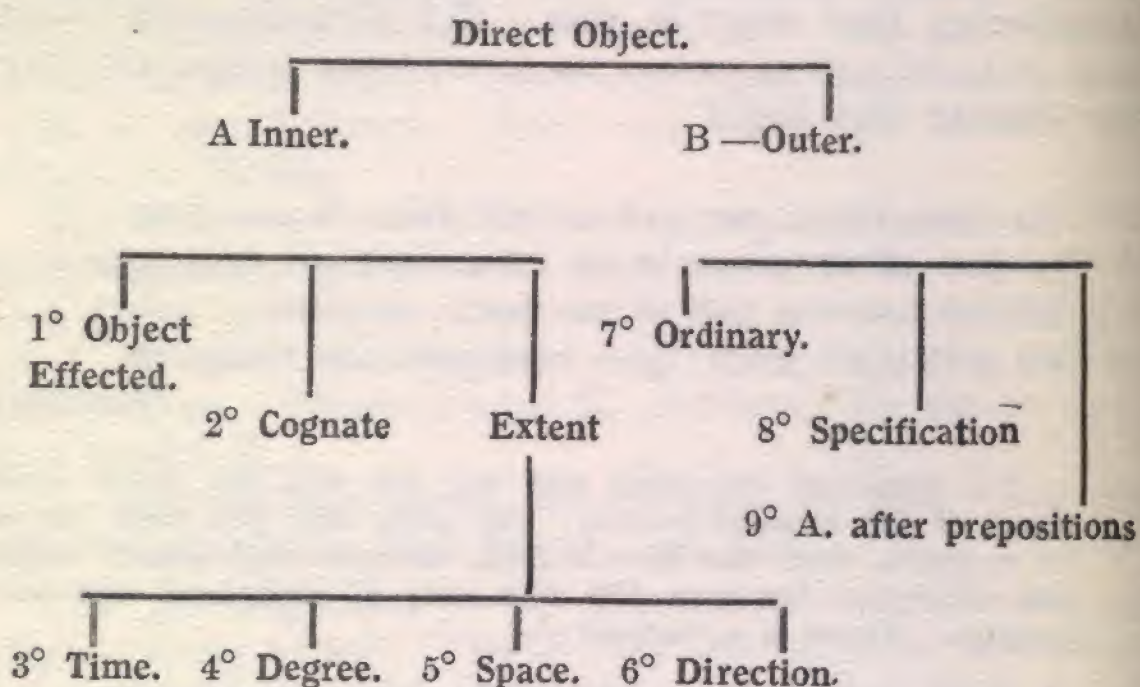
(So the m-w.'s measures were just half the standard !)

(l) Time :—*ó ceann ceann na bliáona*—from one year's end to another ; *ón lá úo*—since the day. . . . (m) Origin :—*is óe munnair Conaill me*—I'm an O'Connell. (n) Price :—*óiolparó tu as an obair sin*—you'll pay for all that ; *cé méro a túsais ar an mbuin* ? How much did you give for the cow ? *Oo óiolas an oá buin ar éasgaíó púnt*—I sold the two cows for £50. (o) Plenty, and emptiness :—*óí an seomra lán óe óaoimib beaga ouba*—the room was full of little black folk ; *tá an áit follam ó óaoimib*—the place is a wilderness ; *a n-aigne cum ó feirg 7 ó buairt* (TBC. 5)—Her mind at rest from anger and worry.

For other meanings of the D. see 304.



**175.—The Accusative :—**The A. is the case of the direct object, *i.e.*, the object which defines directly the action of the verb. The object may be :—(a) virtually contained in the verb itself. This is called the Inner Object, the Object Effected. (b) Or distinct from the vb. This is called the Outer Object, the Object Affected. These distinctions give us the following scheme for the uses of the A.



C.—To denote the general object of thought, etc.  
**The Exclamatory A.**

**The A. after verbs, vb. nouns, and adjectives.**

A. 1° The Inner Object :—*Dó cruthaig Dia an domhan*—God created the world.

(God *made a creature*—the world. 2° The Cognate A. is a special form of the A. of the Inner Object :—*do buail sé buille orm*—he struck me a stroke. 3° The A. of Extent in Time :—*Bíodan as feiceam fadó gac n-fadó* (bn. 264)—They were waiting ever so long ; *scaoil leis an bliam seo*—let it be for this year ; *is dóic liom go raib sí i ngráó leis go mór, tamall* (TBC. 5)—I think she was deeply in love with him for a while. 4° The A. of Extent in Degree :—*Tá an leat-scéal san ró-caoil iarraict* (TBC. 188)—That excuse is a little too subtle ;



Úí sé pas beas fuar—It was a little bit cold. N.B.—This A. is sometimes found in the Rel.—pé méro a verò tú caillte leis (CMO. 318)—Whatever the amount that you are “down” through him ; ro cuas amuò a mórán—I went a deal astray. 5° The A. of Extent in Space :—ro tárla go raib sagart as gabáil an treo (CMO. 317)—A priest happened to be going that way ; tánadair siubal don lae ar agharó (CMO. 71)—They advanced a day’s journey. 6° **Terminal A.**—ro gluais an deatác an sinné amac (S.)—The smoke went out the chimney ; an té ná tagann an doras isteach (CMO. 311)—He who cometh not in through the door ; ná h-impuiríó uairò veiseal ná tuatál (bñ. 256)—Turn not away from it, right or left.

B.—The Outer Object :—7° Ordinary exx.—b’sim é a loic idó—That’s what destroyed them ; ná bris nós—do not violate a custom.

8° The A. of Specification :—An té is lag creideam—He who is weak as to faith ; An té is mó práróinn, is e is cinnte beic ar veiread (up.)—The one in greatest hurry is sure to be last ; ní feicimse domne annso is mó gár leis an mbia seo ná mé féin (CO. 29)—I see no one here in more need of this food than myself. 9° The A. after prepositions : See 162.

C.—The Exclamatory A.—Used interjectionally in such expressions as :—An t-amadán—the fool ! An fear boct—the poor fellow ! Ac grá a tabairt dóib ! (CMO. 317)—But to think of loving them !

176 (a).—Muna mbead, “only for” in such expressions as :—muna mbead é, muna mbead Seán—Only for him, S., may be said to take the A., if we are to look upon it as identical with O.I. ma-ni-bad, which took an A. owing to cen (=san) with which it is almost identical in meaning.

(b) The Projected A.—1° ro beimn toiltéanac ar scrí cuige, ac out cum cannte leis, ní féaróim—I should be willing to write to him, but as to giving him a personal interview—I couldn’t ! (Rhetorical for—ní féaróim out cum cannte leis). 2° Déra dam a Dé, cé no béra acht tu ? (Quoted by Kuno Meyer, PIM. 13)—Who will give me tears but Thou, o God ?



(c) **The Virtual A.**—*ní féadfaí a dóicéall a déanamh ac an t-uain do m'arbhú* (CMO. 247)—All he can do, at his best, is to slay the lamb. *An t-uain*, virtual A. The sentence is an abbreviation of—*ní féadfaí a dó. (punn eile) a dó., ac (féadfaí sé) an t-uain do m'arbhú ; cad a déanfaí mac an éadú ac an tuc a m'arbhú ?*—What should the kitten do but kill a mouse ! *an tuc*—virtual A. The sentence is a contamination (309) of ques. and ans.—*Cad a déanfaí mac an éadú ? (Ar nóm ní déanfaí sé a m'alairt) ac (déanfaí sé) an tuc a m'arbhú !*

**177.—The Vocative Case :—**That of direct address. As it expresses no relation to any other word, it presents no syntactical difficulties. The V. of *Óia*, God, is, in mod. I. *a Óia*, probably to avoid confusion with *a gé* (Goose !).

**178.—The Verbal Noun :—**I. Its ordinary use, in N.G.D.A., or abs. II. In phrases where the agent and the object of the action are both expressed. III. In a passive sense. IV. In answers to questions, etc.

I (a) N.—*Is usa do camal gabáil tré éró snáctaroe, ná do'n tóime saróbir toul istead i rígeact na b'flaitéas*—It is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of heaven ; *níor gáó dó teact na dtreo i n-aon éor an lá san* (CMO. 334)—He needn't have come to meet them that day at all.

(b) Projected N.—*Ac toul a baile na teannta súo, níor maic liom san*—But to go home with that fellow ! I shouldn't like it.

(c) Virtual N.—*Dó beaó náire orm toul istead*—I'd be ashamed to go in ; *tá ačas orm bualaó umat*—I'm pleased to meet you.

(d) Absolute :—*i n-aíaró gac casaó i achrú dá dtéigead ar an gceol, téigead a comctrom d'achrú ar gluaiseact na n'aoime* (S.)—For every change and turn that came upon the music, a corresponding change took place in the people's movements ; *ní deirim ná gur fearroe tu beic do' aonar*—I'm inclined to think you're better alone.

(e) Genitive :—*Cailín deas crúrote na mbó*—The



pretty milk-maid ; *Cearo déanta crocán scriað* (K.)—an artificer of earthen pots ; *Seobpar fear a fionta fós* (TBC. 117)—We'll find a man to wound him yet.

(f) **Dative** :—*Do togas-sa ó tosaí iad, san iad do déanamh don ruada cum an toga san do tuilleam* (CS)—I have chosen them from the beginning, without their having done anything to merit that choice ; *Ói an srian as taitneam ortha, 7 bíodair as glacað na gréime* (CMO. 333)—The sun was shining, and they were sunning themselves.

(g) **Accusative** :—1° *Annsan go scaitprois fanamaint amuis, mar a mbeaí sol 7 díosgán fiacaí* (CMO. 331)—That then they should have to remain outside, where there would be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 2° A. after *san* :—*Níor maíť liom san dul a baile*—I shouldn't like not to go home. 3° A. after *roir*, *go*, etc.—*roir oscailt na ndóirse, 7 noctaí na n-urcóiríeac*—Both the opening of the doors, and the exposure of the culprits ; *go beít dá créactaib cneasuigte* (K.)—Until his wounds were healed ; *tré dul i nguais is eaí tuiteann a lán*—Many fall through courting dangers.

**II. Agent and Object in vb. n. phrase** :—*Is iongna liom é do togaí na n-arm san* (TBC)—I'm surprised that he chooses those weapons ; Sometimes the agent is expressed by a rel. particle :—*Ní tu ba maíť liom o'fágaíl báis ar an gcuma san*—It isn't you I should like to die thus ; when the obj. is a pron., the latter must precede the vb. n., so that agent and object come together, connected generally by *as* (ś) :—*O'omuis sé nárb' féirí a maíť do lot, toisc mé śá tabairt uaim ar son an tslánuišteora* (S. 62)—He admitted it was impossible to mar the good it did, since I gave it away for the Saviour's sake.

**III. The vb. n. in passive sense** :—*Bailiúíró an cogal ar dtúis, 7 ceangalaíró é na punannaib le dógaí* (CMO.)—Gather up first the cockle, and bind it into bundles to burn (=to be burned) ; *Ná leog-se mo cúro póla do doirtaí* (Bn. 407)—Do not allow my blood to be spilt.

The vb. n. is negatived by *san* :—*Dubairt sé liom é*



ṁéanam—He told me to do it ; Dubairt sé liom gan é  
ṁéanam—He told me not to do it.

IV. In answers to questions, etc.—Cao cúige ṁóib  
beit as masao púinn ? É beit tuille asainn—Why are  
they making fun of us ? Because we've deserved it !  
(=é beit tuille asainn pé noeár é, or some such thing);  
Hamlet do teact istead—Enter H. (tagann h. istead  
is rank Déarlačas) ; an dume a bí gan lút a géas 'a  
leigeas as Críost (CS. 90, Title of Chap.)—C. heals the  
sick of the palsy.

179.—Phrase Nouns:—I.—The Bracketed Construction  
(See 171). Further exx.—cun (gabáil de cosaib i gcómaet  
an áirseora) (CMO. 4)—to quell the power of the devil ;  
fan (bruaic na mara san) (CMO. 81)—along that sea-  
shore ; tar éis (oigaltas do baint amach) (Smb. 80)—  
after wreaking vengeance. N.B. gabáil, bruaic, oigaltas  
are absolute.

II. The Unbracketed Construction :—Phrase nouns may  
also be unbracketed, i.e., the fundamental n. or pron.  
functions as N. G. D. or A. In the phrase “ceist a  
cur”—to put a question—ceist may be :—

(a) Subj. N. :—1° to the vb. is—ba maic liom ceist  
a cur ort—I should like to put you a question. 2°  
Appositional N.—Tá sé com maic asainn ceist a cur  
air—we may as well put him a question. 3° Projected  
N.—ac ceist a cur air, níor maic liom san—but as for  
putting him a question, I shouldn't like it. 4° Virtual  
N.—beaó eagla orm ceist a cur air—I should be afraid  
to put him a question.

(b) Predicate N. to is :—'Sé ruo a dem íosa ná ceist  
a cur cúca (CMO. 336)—Jesus simply put them a ques-  
tion. (c) Genitive.—o'éis na ceiste cur cúca o'mtíg  
sé uata—when he had put them the question, he left  
them. (d) Dative.—Dá mbeaó uaim aige ar ceist a cur  
cúca—if he had had time to put them a question.

(e) Accusative :—1° After transitive vb.—o'óruiḡ sé  
dom ceist a cur air—he bade me put him a question.  
2° After gan—gan ceist a cur ar doinne—to question  
nobody. 3° After roir—roir ceist a cur 7 freagra do



glacaid—both putting a question, and receiving an answer. (f) **Virtual A.**—ní féadfaínn a d'éanamh ac an ceist a cur cúca—I could only put them the question.

**III. Adverbial Noun-Phrases** :—(a) Níl rí acu nár táinig breis 7 líon a tríocha céad (TBC. 37)—Every King of them has come with more than the complement of his barony. (b) Bí gach don rud iompuiḡte láitread, taobh síos suas, 7 taobh soir siar (bñ. 634)—Everything was forthwith turned completely topsy-turvy. See 175 A. 4°.

**IV.—Prepositional Noun-Phrases** :—These may be :—  
 (a) **Subj. N.** :—1° To the vb. is :—Níorb' fiú duit gan fanamaint liom (S. 19)—It wasn't worth your while not to wait for me. 2° **Appositional N.**—Tá sé com' maic agat gan dul a baile anocht—You may as well not go home to-night. 3° **Projected N.**—Gan dul a baile, an ead?—Not go home, is it? 4° **Virtual N.**—Beadh náire orm gan é tabairt do—I'd be ashamed not to give it to him. 5° **N. after go dtí** :—go dtí tréis mórán aimsire (AR. 103)—until after a long time. (b) **Pred. N. to is** :—'Sé comairle tug sé dom ná gan dul a baile a tuille—He advised me not to go home any more. (c) **Absolute** :—Níor misde duit gan é innsint dúinn—It wouldn't have been amiss if you hadn't told us. (d) **Genitive** :—1° **Toisc** gan iad a beic ann (CS. 5)—because they are not. 2° **Cun** gan é d'éanamh (MSp. 137)—for not doing it. 3° **Ar** feadh i bfad—for a long time. 4° **i n-éagmuis** gan don coinne a beic acu (bñ)—in addition to their not expecting. . . . 5° **Cun** gan don tsum a cur sa camnt (CMO. 53)—for not attending to the words. (e) **Dative** :—1° **Aníos ó m-aice** an baile móir (S. 130)—up from somewhere near town. 2° **Ó roim' Ábraham** a beic ann (CS. 251)—before A. was made. 3° **le** gan an scoil do caiteam cuige (MSp. 159)—for not relinquishing the school to him. 4° **Ar roir sagart 7 daoine** (CMO. 15)—upon both priest and people. 5° **Ó roim' an éirge amach** (Smb. 147)—since before the Rising. (f) **Accusative** :—1° **After trans. vb.**—Dubairt sé liom gan bac leis a tuille—he told me not to mind it any more. 2° **After gan**—Gan roir leabair is peictiúirí do dógad—without



burning both books and pictures. 3° After *tré*—*Tré gan aire tábairt dó*—owing to inattention. 4° **Virtual A.**—*Ní duháirt sé liom ac gan don dá cúro a déanam oem' díceall*—he told me just to do my level best.

**180.—Noun Clauses :—**Like other nouns, these may be either N.G.D.A. or abs.:—A. Nom. noun-clauses :—  
(a) Subj. N.—1° To is :—*Níor maic liom go ndéanfa a leitéro*—I shouldn't like you to do such a thing. 2° Appos. N.—*Tá sé ráirte ná ndéanfa éire cú de máda-ruaó*—it has been said that “nothing will make a silk purse out of a sow's ear.” 3° Projected N.—*Go ndéanfa sí an fear san, is deacair é tuiscint*—that she should have worked this treachery is hard to believe. 4° Virtual N.—*Bí náire uirri go raib sí cóim dána sin* (Smb. 138)—she was ashamed of her boldness. 5° N. after *go* *rtí* :—*Go rtí go rtiofaó Séadna*—till S. should come. (b) Pred. N.—*b'é ba maic liomsa ná ndéanfa go deo é*—I should really wish it were never done. (c) Genitive :—1° *Cun go ndéanfa é*—that it might be done. 2° *Toisc gur tugais céad punt dom* (S.)—seeing that you gave me £100. (d) Dative :—*Ní raib deimne aise ar gurb é mac Dé é* (Cmó. 92)—he was not certain that He was the Son of God. (e) Accusative :—1° After trans. vb.—*Nuair a tuig an fear boct cé bí aise ann* (Smb. 124)—when the poor fellow realised who it was. 2° After *gan*—*Ní beaó don iongna orm gion go ndéanfa é*—I shouldn't be surprised if you didn't do it.—*gion go*=O.I. *cen co*, without that . . . . lit.=although . . . . not, but sometimes=although. The clause “*go ndéanfa é*” is A. governed by *gan* (*gion*); while the clause “*gion go ndéanfa é*” is virtual N. 3° Appositional A.—*Ná cuirimis san de masla ar ár nglóire, go rteicfimis ón gcrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross !

4° Absolute :—*Ní cuirfimm a catú go bráic díom go mbeimn pósta as amadán*—I should never cease to regret being married to a fool. 5° Virtually absolute :—*Ní féadfaí sé a ráó ac ná tíoafaí sé arís*—The only rejoinder left him is that he'll not come again.



181.—Aspiration of noun is often **dynamic**, *i.e.*, employed to mark certain psychological distinctions :—(a) *ṽán molta* (C<sup>o</sup>)—a panegyric poem. (b) *ar bruač na fearrge*—on the sea-shore (indefinite) : *ar ūruač na f.* on a (particular) shore of the sea. (c) *ṽume san cos*—a person without legs : *ṽume san cos*, one deprived of a particular leg. (d) *airm cogair*—war-weapons (general) : *airm cogair*, weapons for a particular war. (e) *culait ságar*, a priest's dress (particular).

182.—Remarks on the Cases :—(a) *ṽios ann an lá san* (not *ar an lá san*)—I was there on that day. But—*berò troscad ar an lá san*—that day will carry with it the obligation of fasting. (b) The D. pl. in *-ib* is often used **dynamically** :—*Cuirfidh san rač ar ṽaoime*—that will make people prosperous : *ṽionn an rač ar ṽaoimib áiríte*—some people are lucky. (c) The N. pl. for the G.—*Do lean sé ag sgrí leitreacha éigin ar an talam* (C<sup>mo</sup>. 305)—He continued writing certain letters on the ground.

183.—Number :—(a) *siubal lae*, a day's journey ; *siubal trí lá*, a three days' journey ; *1 scaiteamh an cúig lá*, during (the period of) 5 days ; *an deic lá*, the (period of) ten days. But when the space of time is looked at in its component parts the pl. is used :—*ní raib don uair a' cluig 1 scaiteamh na ndeic laeteanta san . . . .* there wasn't an hour during those ten days. (b) The sg. noun is often used in speaking of a multitude where English uses the pl. 1° *ná bíod ór ná airgead ná saróbreas 1 taisege aguib 1 nbur scrios* (C<sup>mo</sup>. 246)—Have neither gold nor silver nor any other kind of wealth in your girdles. 2° *ní féarparois a meabhrú n-a n-aigne* (T<sup>bc</sup>. 89)—they couldn't imagine. (c) But when the multitude act individually, the pl. is used :—*. . . . dom' fearaib bocta a bí ag imirt a n-anam* (G. pl.) *ag troir le nbur namair* (ṽn.)—to my poor men who were risking their lives fighting against your enemies. (d) The sg. is used generally after *is mó*=many a :—*is mó ṽume bí 1 rioct sparám o'fagáil 7 ná fuair*—many a man was on the point of getting a purse, and didn't. But the pl.



occurs when there is question of a class :—*is mo daoiné na c' iad atá, riam ó sóm, as deanam an uile saḡas dícill ar an b'firimne sin do bogaḡ* (CMO. 264)—many other people besides them are ever since making every effort to discount that statement. (e) The sg. *an té* may mean "those who"—*An té is lúḡa ciall is é is mó camnt*—They who have least sense talk most. (f) The sg. is often used with numerals :—1° *Tri níḡ san ríḡaíl—bean, muc 7 múille* (UP.)—Three ungovernable things—a woman, a pig, a mule ! 2° *Na tri ball is furus a ḡortuḡaḡ—súil, ḡlún 7 uille* (UP.)—The three members easily hurt—the eye, the knee and the elbow. 3° *ḡeallḡ naḡi mbó píceaḡ daḡ le caílín duḡ burḡe san céill. Ac mo máirḡ ḡur pós mé ariam í, is amḡoir na ḡcraob' mo véro* (CCU. 104)—I was promised 29 cows, and a dark yellow girl with no sense, Alas ! that I ever married her, leaving behind me the maid of the flowing hair !



## CHAPTER III.

### SYNTAX OF THE ADJECTIVE.

184.—An adj. is **attributive** when it qualifies the n. without the intervention of any verbal form :—*o'píll an mac breoite*—the sick lad returned ; *o mairb Seán óg é*—young S. killed it. An adj. is **predicative** when attached to the n. only through the medium of a verb :—*tá an fosaíóeact san ana-breag*—that pasturage is very fine. The vb., however, may be present only by implication :—1° *o'píll an mac 7 é breoite*—the lad returned sick. 2° *o mairb Seán 7 é óg é*—S. killed it when he was young. 3° *o mairb Seán é 7 é óg*—S. killed it young.

The **attributive** adj.—with the exceptions given below—follows its n. and agrees with it in gender, number and case, but not necessarily, of course, in declension :—*féar mór*, a great man ; *pír móra*, great men ; *bean maic*, a good woman ; *mná maice*, good women ; *mac an píir móir seo*, this big man's son ; *mḡean na mná maice sin*, that good woman's daughter.

185 (a).—The **Cardinals** from 1 to 10 precede their nouns, whether other numbers are added or not :—*trí bliadhna*, *trí bliadhna píceaṁ* (*seascaṁ*, 7rl.), three, twenty-three (63) years. N.B.—*bróg*, *oá bróis*, *trí bróga*—one, two, three shoes ; *aon bróg*, any shoe ; *aon bróg amáin*, one shoe.

(b) The **Ordinals**, also, except *tánaise*, *tánaiste* (2nd) precede the n.—*an dara h-aois oéag*—the 12th century. But—*an aois tánaiste*—the 2nd age of life (from 7 to 16 years).

(c) The **pronom. adjs.**—*gac*, *gac aon*, *gac uile*, *an uile*, *gac 're* precede the n. Add to these the article, and the interrog. adjs., *cia*, *ca* :—*cionnus*, *conus*, how ; *canadṁ*, where ; *ca h-uair*, when, etc.



(d) **Simple** adjs. (but not those with the suffixes -*ac*, -*mar*, -*amail*, -*da*, -*ta*, -*ta* ; nor participles) may precede the n. attributively, but then they form compounds, and often have a special shade of meaning :—*mór-cúis*, conceitedness : *cúis mór*, a grave reason ; *nuá-*fiadhnáise**, New Testament ; *fiadhnáise nuá*, fresh evidence.

(e) **Deas**—good, **droc**—bad, always precede the n. After the n. and also when predicative *maic* and *olc* must be used :—*an deas-bean*, the good lady ; *droc-scéal*, bad news ; *níor b'ris focal maic fiacal riam*—a good word never did any harm ; *is maic bean deis-fir* (TBC. 1)—a good man's wife is good.

(f) **Sean**, old, often precedes the n., but also follows, both attributively and predicatively, though, when pred., *dostrá* is often preferred :—*an sean-scéal i scóm-nuróe*—the old, old story ; *tá sé dostrá go maic*—he's fairly old. The prefixed *sean* is sometimes contemptuous or humorous :—*An sean-buaicail*—the devil. N.B.—*an tIomna Sean*, *an tIomna Nuá*—the Old, the New Testament.

**186.**—The Ordinals are indeclinable. Before *donnmað*, *octrmað*, the art. is *an t-* (N. and A.) whether the n. is M. or F., and *na h-* in G. sg. F.—1° *an t-octrmað aois deas*, the 18th century : *lár na h-octrmað aoise deas*, the middle of the 18th c. 2° *i dtosað an octrmað caibrioil* (CMO. 231), in the beginning of the 8th chapter. 3° *céad*, 1st, is uninflected, as it forms a compound with the noun :—*peaca na céad mna* (CMO. 21), the 1st woman's sin. 4° *An tarna*, the 2nd, keeps this form in G. sg. F.—*i dtosað an tarna h-aoise*—in the beginning of the 2nd century. But—*i dtosað na dara h-aoise*.

**187 (a)** In mod. I. pred. adjs. are not inflected :—*is maic iad na fir cum na mban do cosc*—Men are good for checking women.

(b) Compar. and superl. adjs. are always pred. N. to some form of *is*, and are not inflected for gender or number. *Níos* (*níosa*) *níá* sometimes occur even after some form of *is* :—*tíocfað an oisreacht cúgac níá*



śābāīcā an bótar díreac, bíod go mba níba rígne é (LúC. 30)—the inheritance would have reached you more safely by the straight road, though it would have been slower.

(c) Certain adjs. do not admit comparison :—féidir, possible ; cuma, the same ; céanna, same ; eile, other ; uile, all ; numerals. In regard to féidir, one *could* say :—is móire is féidir duit é, más féidir leat é, it is all the more possible for you, if you think it so.

(d) “Less” and “least” are usually rendered by lúgá with A. of Specification :—ní feaca riamh don bean ba lúgá tuisgint ná í—I never saw a less intelligent woman. In the first member of a Proportion sentence (212) “the less” is dá luigead :—Dá luigead í an tuisgint is ead is mó an tugtaict cum cainte—the less the intelligence, the greater the propensity to talk.

(e) Níos, níosa, níba, are often strengthened by the addition of a numeral, generally dá or seacht :—1° Do beadh oic níba seacht measa ná é tagaite air (TBC. 10)—A very much greater evil would have come upon him. Níosa eclipses r :—Tá sé i bfead níosa bfeadarr moiu—he’s much better to-day. 2° Tá sé níosa dá measa ná mar a bí—he’s twice as bad as he was. 3° Sometimes the thought is fully expressed :—Do beadh oic ba seacht n-uaire níba measa tagaite air.

188 (a) When several adjs. are used of the same n. or pron. agus is often absent, when the adjs. are of similar meaning, or when one of them is merely intensive :—1° Cailín ciúim ciallmar (S.)—a quiet, sensible girl. 2° Lá breag bog—a beautifully soft day. 3° Nac breag bog a tagadh cainte cúgac !—how very easily you talk !

(b) When the adjs. or advs. express quite different ideas, or when there is a gradation, or a climax, agus is used :—1° Bí an cainte go láidir, 7 go ciallmar 7 go bunabasac—the words were strong, and sensible and to the point. 2° Tá sé go holc, 7 go h-ana-olc, 7 go malluigte—he’s bad, very bad, even vicious. 3° Śābāīl go h-árō, 7 go ceolmar 7 go binn (CMO. 378)—chanting it aloud, musically, melodiously. 4° Do dīūltuīgōar go tur 7 go fuatmar, 7 go seasmac (CMO.



384)—they refused, not only with dourness, but with hatred and obstinacy.

189.—**Participial** adjs. are used with *τá* in an elliptical construction :—1° *τá rítte leat tamall maít gan díol as* (TBC. 6)—you've run a good while without punishment. 2° *τá itte γ ólta ašamn*—we've eaten and drunk. 3° *Ófuil críocnuíste ašat?*—have you finished?

190.—The **Dual** adj. has the same form as the pl. Its initial is ordinarily aspirated :—*óá bróis óeasá*—two nice shoes ; *óá súil šorma*—two blue eyes ; *óá šašart óiaóasamlá*—two pious priests. When *óá* is preceded by the G. pron. *a*, that pron. may aspirate or eclipse the init. *o-* according to circumstances ; in which case *óá* will asp. the following consonant :—*Ói na glomí na nóá óorn acu*—they had the glasses in their two fists. Or the *o-* of *óá* may be aspirated in all cases, and then the pron. produces its natural effect on the n.—*a óá óorn*—her two fists ; *a óá óorn*—his two fists ; *a óá nóorn*—their two fists ; *γ a óá šcroiðe óá sniom le buairt* (Mac. 263)—and their two hearts rent with anxiety. This seems to be the Conn. and W. Kerry usage :—*a óá béal buaíte ar a céite* (Smb. 17)—her two lips tightly closed. In “*n-a óá súil šlais*” (Smb. 15)—in her two grey eyes—the adj. is irregular for *šlasa* (due to the sg., *na súil šlais*).

191 (a) *τρί, četre, cúis, sé* may take a sg. or a pl. n.—*τρί capall* or *τρί capall*. The aspiration here may be due to O.I. *trí chét* (300), where *cét* is a true pl., and aspiration is regular.

(b) *τρί* and *četre* were declined in O.I. and so eclipse in G. *Cúis* and *sé* eclipse analogically—*γ šcionn na ótrí mblian óeas*, at the end of the 13 years ; *ainmíðte na šcetre šcos*, the four-footed animals ; *ar son na šcúis šcúisí*—for the 5 provinces, etc.

(c) Besides the ordinary method of counting, observe : (a) *seáct šcinn óeas óe buaib*—seventeen head of cows. This form is used when the numeral is compound, and the n. has an adj. attached :—*četre cinn píceao óe*



capallib duba—24 black horses. (b) trí deic a seacht de blianaib (CMO. 9)—37 years. (c) seacht n-uaire pé seacht noic (CMO. 292)—seventy times seven times. (d) céad oit noic a cúig de míleib fear (Mac. 7)—185,000 men. (e) sa bliain céad dá deic a sé—in the year 126.

**192.—Pronominal Adjectives :—**(a)—The possessives *mo*, etc., are G. (sg. and pl.) of the personal pronouns used (like G. nouns) as adjectives.

(b) Interrogative Adjectives :—

1° These (along with *n.*) are always pred. N. to *is* understood :—Conus (a) tadoi ?—How are you ? = Ca ionnus (an ionnus) a tadoi ? Cf. Conn.—Cia tadoi a bfuil tu ?

2° Even when *the clause itself* is under government the interrog. adj. remains pred. N. to *is* :—Cumingeas sé ar conus mar a tuit pallaí ároa láire na catraic san cun taimh anuas (CMO. 81)—He would think of how the strong high walls of that city tumbled to the ground.

3° So, when the clause is absolute :—Ní raib fíos acu cia'cu dume bí acu—they knew not with which one they were dealing.

**193.—Noun-clauses introduced by interrog. adjs. may be N.G.D.A. or absolute.**

1° **Nom.**—(a) To *is* :—ní neol dom conus a dem sé e—I don't know how he did it ; ní cumhinn liom cia'cu ceann adubairt sé ba measa—I forget which one he said was worst. (b) Pred. N. to *is* :—Sí ceist a cuir sé cúca ná cia'cu dume ba dóic leo ba cómursa do'n dume bí i bpém—the question He put them was simply this, which one they thought was neighbour to the man in pain. (c) Appositional N.—Tá sé soilleir go maic cia'cu dume acu atá cionntac—it's plain enough which one of them is guilty.

2° **Absolute.**—Ní raib fíos agam cia'cu leabhar adéar-faimh ba deise—I didn't know which book I should call the nicest.

3° **Virtual N.**—Bí iongna orm cia'cu dume acu go raib an cion go léir aicé air—I wondered as to which of them she was so fond of.



**4° Genitive.**—*Ní raib acu tuairim acu i 'tSaoib cial'cu tuine acu bí acu*—they could only guess to which of them they were speaking.

**5° Dative.**—*Do cumniḡeadar . . . . ar conus mar a bíodar féin as obair* (CMO. 378)—they reflected on how they themselves had been working.

**6° Accus.**—*Do tuis an t-actair peadar go náluinn conus is ceart ḡoluinn a scrí*—Fr. P. knew perfectly how I. should be written.

**194.**—Fem. adjs. in D. sg. sometimes resist inflection. At times this may be explained on the phrase-noun principle :—*isteac i ḡclais beas* (CMO. 80)—into a little hole ; *as an lánamam ós* (CMO. 110)—at (by) the young couple ; *ar cloic mór trom* (LMC. 42)—on (of) a big heavy stone ; *i Sráir Uachtaraic Uí Conaill* (Smb 135)—in Up. O'C. St. ; *Aislins a tamic eugam aréir, a mearuis ḡ a breoir mo éoróe, ar óis-mhaoi deas maiseac a tamic eugam le n-a póis san oiróe'* (C.C.U. 100)—A vision came to me last night, that quickened and sickened my heart, of a fair lovely young woman who came to me with her kiss in the night ; *trío an ḡcaitair beas* (CMO. 159)—through the little town ; *cuir sí isteac ar an ḡcainnt bladarac seo* (Smb. 164)—she interrupted this insinuating language. Sometimes the fem. adj. is inflected—*doimne de'n lánamam óis* (bn. 577)—any one of the young couple.



## CHAPTER IV.

### SYNTAX OF THE PRONOUN.

195.—The Personal Pronouns.—These are fully declined, having N. G. D. and A. forms. The N. forms may be absolute :—

(a) In the Bracketed Construction :—1° ΔΟ' ΙΑΡΡΑΙΘ Ε ΛΕΑΓΑΘ ΑΝΥΑΣ ΔΡ ΑΝ ΟΤΑΛΑΜ (CMO. 325)—trying to throw Him on the ground. 2° ΤΡΕΙΣ Ι ΤΕΔΕΤ ΙΣΤΕΔΕ—when she had come in. 3° ΟΑ ΟΤΟΙΛΙΓΙΜΝ ΕΥΝ ΤΥ ΖΑ ΜΑΡΒΑΘ (BN. 406)—were I to consent to your killing him. 4° ΛΕ ΥΙΜΝ ΙΣΙ ΒΕΙΤ ΔΣ ΤΕΔΕΤ (BN. 545)—while she was coming.

(b) When they are the term of proleptic Δ, οε, Δου, etc.—1° Οοβ' ΨΕΑΡΡΟΕ ΔΟΝ ΟΜΑΙΡΤΕ Ι ΒΕΙΤ ΑΝΝ (ΔΡ. 38)—any council would have benefited by her presence. 2° ΙΣ ΜΟΡΟΕ ΜΟ ΜΙΑΝ Ε ΕΛΟΣ ΤΥΣΑ ΒΕΙΤ ΖΑ ΡΑΘ ΣΑΝ ΥΙΟΜ (ΨΔ.)—I desire to hear it all the more since you tell me that. 3° ΟΙΑ'ΟΥ Ε ΕΡΟΕΑΘ ΝΟ Ε ΛΕΟΓΑΙΜΤ ΣΑΟΡ ΙΣ ΡΟΖΑ ΥΙΘ ?—which is your choice, to have him hanged or acquitted ?

(c) After ΙΣ ΨΙΥ=is worth, is worthy of, and speaking generally, wherever there is logical, without grammatical, apposition—ΝΙ ΨΙΥ Ι Ε—it is not worth it.

196.—The personal pronouns :—

(a) In virtual Nom.—1° ΟΙ ΔΤΑΣ ΜΟΡ ΑΙΡ ΙΑΘ ΟΟ ΤΕΔΕΤ (ΔΡ. 8)—he was delighted that they came. 2° ΤΑ ΟΑΤΥ ΟΡΜ Ι ΤΑΒΑΙΡΤ ΡΙΑΜ ΟΟ (BN. 803)—I'm sorry I ever gave her to him. 3° ΟΙ ΟΑΤΥ ΔΡ ΝΑ ΞΑΕΘΙΛ ΙΑΘ ΟΟ ΟΥΛ ΔΣ ΟΜ ΣΑΟΡ (ΔΡ. 89)—the Irish were sorry that they (the enemy) got off so lightly.

(b) As A. of Extent in Space.—ΔΡ ΣΙΥΒΛΑΙΣ Ε ΞΟ ΛΕΜ ?—did you walk the whole way ?



197.—The G. forms are usually either :—

(a) Possessive :—*mo leabhar-sa*—my book, or—

(b) Subjective :—*is móire mo mian é clos*—my desire to hear it is all the greater.

(c) Objective :—*tátar cum bur marbta*—they're going to kill you.

(d) Partitive (but only within certain limits) :—*a leat*—half of it (them) ; *a bfuirmór*—the most of them. Generally partitive *de* or *as* (with D. of course) :—*an cúro is mó acu* ; *a lán asainn*—many of us ; *cúro asuib*—some of you.

When the n. is V. the G. of the personal pronoun is usually not expressed in mod. I.—*a tigearna Oia*—my Lord God ; *a Oia na glóire*—O ! my God Almighty ; *a cáit a laog*—my dear Cáit. In—*ár n-atair atá ar neam*—*ár* is retained on account of its theological importance.

198 (a) The D. forms are found (suffixed) with those preps. that governed the D. alone ; never after *ar*, sometimes after *m*.

(b) These prons. as well as nouns, may be in the virtual A. (176, c).

(c) Besides the ordinary emphatic particles, *fém* is sometimes attached :—1° *Cuair sé fém 7 iad san ar bóro na lunge* (CMO. 254)—Both He and they embarked. 2° *Bíodar aradon ann, é fém 7 í fém*—They were both there, he and she (man and wife).

(d) For the conjunctive and disjunctive uses of 3 sg. and 3 pl. forms, see 110.

### Prolepsis (199—216).

199 (a) The first use of the personal pronouns was analeptic, *i.e.*, retrospective, referring to some person, place, thing, group or name already mentioned. Prolepsis means the anticipatory use, referring to a noun, pronoun, phrase or clause to follow, and pronouns so used are called proleptic.

(b) The general rule governing prolepsis may be stated thus :—1° When the proleptic pronoun is N. or A. governed by a transitive vb., the “term” is likewise



N. or A. 2° When the proleptic pron. is G. D. A. governed by a prep., or absolute, then the term is absolute.

(c) The following pronouns are used proleptically in mod. I.—A.—é, í, íaò, eaò. B.—sé. C.—san.

D.—so, seo. E.—é sm. F.—sroé (sroí, sroíaò). G.—The 3 sg. G. pron. a. H.—The 3 pl. G. pron. a. I.—The suffixed prons. (D. or A.) after many preps., notably, oe, acu, air, uime, leis, cuige, amháin.

## 200.—Proleptic é, í, íaò, eaò :—

1° All four are used in Identification Sentences to anticipate the predicate in Types I, II, III, VIII, IX, and X. (See Syntax of the Copula).

2° é, í and íaò are also used proleptically to anticipate :—(a) the subject in interrog. sentences :—Cao é an áit as ar cúsaís cúsaínn an maoira so? (Lúc. 42)—Where did you bring this dog from? (b) Sometimes outside interrog. sentences :—Is líonmair íaò a mbuine (TbC. 148)—numerous are their battalions. But the next sentence has, without any proleptic pron.—is gléineac taitneamh a n-éirí 7 a n-arm—their armour and weapons gleam brightly.

3° In other than is sentences é is used proleptically :—(a) In the Nom.—Ní beir orm é tabairt le ráð dóibh sur dmeas é—I shan't have to give them to say that I did it. (b) In the A.—Dem é fógaírt go scuipar an cime cum báis—have it announced that the prisoner will be put to death. (c) Virtual N.—Tá ádas ortá é beir le ráð acu go breacadar an rí—they are glad to have it to say that they saw the king. (d) Absolute :—Tá a fíos acu é beir socair go ndoírfar é—they know it is settled that he will be condemned. (e) Appositional N.—Tá sé ag gollleamaint orm é beir socair, go . . . I'm worried that they have arranged that . . .

N.B.—In all these exx. the “term” is to be parsed according to rule given in 199 (b).

201.—Proleptic sé :—(a) Tá sé uaigneac a beir folam (UP.)—its a lonesome thing to be empty. (b) An té a mbeir sé na cinneamam é crocad, ca báirtéar go bráit é (UP.)—He who is destined to be hanged will



never be drowned ! (c) *níl sé ceart agat an sgéal do glacadh óm bog* (AR. 40)—you should not take things so easily. (d)—*Ói sé an-áiseamhail aige áit dá sórt beic aige le leictreacha a sgríobadh ann* (SmB. 129)—he found it very convenient to have such a place to write letters in.

**202.**—Proleptic *san* :—*Ná cuirimis san de masta ar ár nglóire go dtéirimis ón gcrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross. *San* denotes “the distant object.” For the Christian “to shirk the cross” is an odious thing, and should be put far from him. *San* is here utterly contemptuous.

**203.**—Proleptic *so, seo* :—*1° Cao a tug so dómsa máthair mo tighearna do teacht ag triall orm ?* (CS. 140)—Whence is this to me that the Mother of my Lord should come to me ? *So* denotes that which is near the speaker. Pleasant things are brought near in thought and imagination. *2° Ac cuireadh so buairt ort, san tu beic óm mair ná óm h-aireadh ort féin 7 ba ceart do dúine démhóireadh a beic i seirbhís Dóe* (Im. 224)—But be troubled about this, that thou art not as good or as watchful over thyself as a devout person should be in God’s service.

Good advice is brought “near the mind’s eye.” Note that *so* is much stronger than either *sé*, or *é*.

**204.**—Proleptic *é sin* :—*1° Agus má’s fíor é, a fíor tighis, cao é sin d’aoimne eile sin ?* (TBC. 16)—And if it’s true, Mr. Steward, what’s that to anyone else ? *2° Cao é sin duitse 7 dómsa san ?* (CMO. 110)—What is that to thee or to Me ? In these exx. *é sin* is primarily analeptic, but *sin, san*, are added at the end to satisfy the proleptic tendency of *é sin*. When *é sin* is analeptic it refers ordinarily to a M. (or orig. neut.) noun. But when proleptic, it may refer to either gender, either number, and any of the three persons :—*3° Cao é sin dúinne tusa ?* (CS. 21)—What art Thou to us ? *Cao é sin dúinne sibse ?*—What are ye to us ? *Cao é sin daoibse í síú ?*—What is such a woman to you ? *4°*



This proleptic *é sin* (preceded by *cao*) often anticipates another *cao* (*c1a*) question :—(a) *Caο é sin do san caο a deanfar do an áro-rígeact?* (N. 296)—What is it to him how it fares with the High-Kingship? (b) *Caο é sin dúinne c1a'cu 'tátar socair air nó ná fuiltear* (N. 315)—What is it to us whether they have decided on it or not? N.B.—Pred. of 1st is.—*Caο . . . . dúinne*. Subj.—*é sin* (proleptic) : Real subj.—*c1a'cu . . . . fuiltear*. Pred. of 2nd is (understood with *c1a*)—*c1a'cu . . . . fuiltear*. Subj.—*é*, *understood*.

205.—Proleptic *síodé* (*síodí*, *síodíad*) :—*Síodé is mó a coisceannt solás ó Dá ar teact cuḡat, a deactraect teact iompáil cun úrnuigte* (Im. 150)—This is what mostly prevents heavenly consolation from reaching you, the difficulty you experience in turning to prayer. Note that *síodé* is stronger than *is é*.

206.—The proleptic G. sg. *a* :—There are three uses:—

I.—Before a vb. n. to anticipate the object of the action (when this is a phrase or clause which cannot be inflected) ; also before nouns like *burdeacas* which imply action.

II.—Before a n. denoting quality, quantity, time, intensity, meaning, and similar notions, to anticipate—(a) the action itself (verb) ; (b) a noun which is not a noun of action at all ; (c) a pronoun.

III.—Before a noun denoting state, condition, etc., to anticipate a *tá* clause.

207.—Before a verbal noun :—1° *Díod a fíos an méro seo aḡaib go bfuil rígeact Dé i n-acamaireact* (CMO. 314)—Know ye this, that the Kingdom of God is at hand. 2° *Tis liom a ráo teact go bfuilpró mé féin* (Smb. 112)—I can tell you I shall return myself. 3° In Conn. I. proleptic *a* is sometimes absent :—*Aḡ iarraio ar an easboc smaect a cur ar an saḡart* (Smb. 125)—requesting the bishop to keep the curate in order. Strict I. idiom requires *ḡá iarraio*.

208.—Before equivalently vb. nouns :—1° *a Dá*,



BEIRIM A BURDEACAS LEAT NÁ FUILM-SE MAR AN CUIR EILE  
 DE SNA DAOINE (CMO. 359)—O God, I thank Thee that  
 I am not like the rest of men. 2° CAO É A BRÍG FEALL  
 CONCUBAIR SEACAS AN FEALL SO ? (TBC. 42)—What signi-  
 fies C's. treachery compared with this ?

209.—Before a non-vb. noun :—1° AGUS A LIACTAIGE  
 BEAN ÁLUINN BÍ SA TÍR ! (SmB. 153)—And there were so  
 many fair women in the land ! 2° BÍ IONGNA A SCORÓE  
 ORTA A FEABAS A DOMEADAR AN GNÓ (S. 183)—They were  
 amazed that they did the thing so well. 3° In U. and  
 Conn. I. instead of proleptic *a*, we often find the fol-  
 lowing :—CUMNIG SÍ ANOIS AR Cóm MINIC IS DUBAIRT SÍ  
 LE NA MAC (SmB. 34)—She thought now of how often she  
 had told her son (=Munster I.—AR A MINICIGE ADUBAIRT ;  
 or—AIR, CAO É A MINICIGE).

210.—Anticipating a “ *ta* ” clause :—1° IONGNA ORTA  
 A PARO ATÁIM UATA (TBC. 252)—surprised that I am so  
 long away from them. 2° CAO É AN BEANN A BEAD AIGE  
 SIÚD AR UISGE TE, 7 A TEO ATÁ AN ÁIT AS A DTÁMIG SÉ ?  
 (S. 113)—What should he care about hot water, con-  
 sidering the heat of the place whence he came ?

211.—*Dá*=however, notwithstanding, etc.—This is  
 simply proleptic *a* preceded by the prep. *do* or *de*.  
 At first *a* was analeptic. E.g.—1 SCAT DÁ TRUIME, 1  
 N-ÉIGM DÁ GÉIRE, 1 SPÉIRLMN DÁ DÉIME (N.)—In battle  
 for (all) its heaviness, in stress for (all) its sharpness,  
 in combat for (all) its sternness. Here, *cat*, *éigm*,  
*spéirlmn* are D. When *a* is proleptic these nouns become  
 absolute :—DÁ TRUIME CAT, DÁ GÉIRE ÉIGM, DÁ DÉIME  
 SPÉIRLMN. Take the Eng. sentence :—For all his clever-  
 ness, he has made a mistake. The I. for this is like the  
 E. with one important difference :—DÁ GASTACT É, TÁ  
 DEARMAD DÉANTA AIGE. The E. “ *he* ” is rendered in  
*aige*, and the I. *é* is not in the E. at all. There is another  
 difference. When the E. possessive “ *he* ” changes for  
 gender, number and person, “ *his* ” must change also.  
 Thus—For all *her* cleverness, she has made a mistake.  
 If I. followed the same scheme we should have—DÁ



ḡASTACCT (i) TÁ DEARMAD DEANTA AIC1. So—O'AR ḡASTACCT (sinn) TÁ DEARMAD DEANTA AGAINN—for all *our* cleverness, etc. But this is not done. The 3 sg. form TÁ ḡASTACCT is *generalized* for both genders and numbers and all three persons. Once the principle of Generalization is understood the whole matter becomes quite simple. Examples :—1° TÁ FEABAS RÍ BÍONN PROC-DUINE ÉIGIN AR A CÍ (PSA.)—No matter how good a king may be, there is always some evil person to attack him. 2° TÁ LUIGEAD TU, NÍ LEANB TU—You may be small, but you're no child ! 3° CUIRPTÉAC UILE IS EAD É, TÁ STEAMÁINE A ḡIALL 7 TÁ ÓIGE A FÉACÁINT (TBC. 107)—He's a vicious wretch, though his jaw is so smooth and his look so young.

**212.—Proportion** :—Proportion sentences like “the more the merrier” are expressed in mod. I. by the formula :—TÁ . . . . IS EAD IS . . . . This is a further use of proleptic A found in TÁ :—1° TÁ LUATACCT A BEIMÍO CÍAR SA BÁILE IS EAD IS FEARR É (TBC. 118)—The sooner we are back at home, the better. 2° DO CUIḡ SÍ . . . . TÁ MÉIO 7 TÁ FÍRINNIGE É AN MOLAD GURB EAD IS MÓ AN CONNTABÁIRT (CMO. 32)—She knew that the greater and the juster the praise, the greater is the danger (to humility). 3° TÁ LUATACCT A BEROIS INTIGTE AS AN SCATÁIR, GURB EAD B'FEARRA DÓIB FÉIN É (ON. 718)—that the sooner they left the city the better it would be for themselves. In order to understand the genesis of this formula, let us consider three stages :—

(a) The Mathematical stage :—TÁ FÁIO A RAḡAÍO SÍB AR AḡAÍO IS EAD IS ḡIORRA BERO SÍB DON BÁILE—The farther you advance the nearer you'll be to home. Here we are measuring spacial distance by spacial distance, and the measurement is mathematically accurate. The sentence is of the Type—PVpS. It is the emphatic form of—IS TÁ FÁIO A RAḡAÍO SÍB AR AḡAÍO IS ḡIORRA BERO SÍB DO'N BÁILE. And this is the complex, elliptical form of—IS É A FÁIO A RAḡAÍO SÍB AR AḡAÍO AN MÉIO STIGE N-ARB ḡIORRA BERO SÍB DO'N BÁILE DE. The subj. is absolutely clear—AN MÉIO STIGE . . . . DE, i.e., the distance by which you'll be nearer home ; the pred. is equally clear—



Δ  $\dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$  Δ . . . . Δ $\dot{\text{g}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ —the distance you shall advance, and the statement is mathematically accurate.

(b) The Intermediate stage :— $\text{Dá } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$   $\text{an } \text{lá}$   $\text{is } \text{ea}\text{i}$   $\text{is } \text{giorra } \text{an } \text{oí}\text{ó}\text{ce}$ —the longer the day, the shorter the night. Here a certain “looseness” has crept in. When we analyse it we shall find an inexactitude which was not in the previous sentence. The unemphatic form is— $\text{Is } \text{dá } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$   $\text{an } \text{lá}$   $\text{is } \text{giorra } \text{an } \text{oí}\text{ó}\text{ce}$ . And this is the complex, elliptical form of— $\text{Is } \text{é } \Delta \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$   $\text{an } \text{lá}$   $\text{an } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$   $\text{n-}\Delta\text{rb } \text{giorra } \text{an } \text{oí}\text{ó}\text{ce } \text{óe}$ . The subj. is clear now— $\text{an } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$  . . . .  $\text{óe}$ —the length by which the night is shorter ; and the pred. is— $\Delta \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$   $\text{an } \text{lá}$ —the length of the day (*lit.*—the length of it—the day). But this is not true, taken literally. The length by which the night is shorter is *not* the length of the day, but rather the increase in length. The formula which was “above suspicion” in (a) is now used with a little latitude—that is all.

(c) The Final stage :—The formula is now used for all kinds of proportion :— $\text{Dá } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$   $\Delta$   $\text{leogfár } \text{i n-}\Delta\text{isge léi } \text{é}$ ,  $\text{is } \text{ea}\text{i}$   $\text{is } \text{dána } \text{leanfáró sí } \text{óe}$  (S. 119)—The longer she’s let off with it, the more brazenly she’ll stick to it.—Emphatic form of— $\text{Is } \text{dá } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$  . . . .  $\text{é}$ ,  $\text{is } \text{dána}$  . . . .  $\text{óe}$ . And this is the complex elliptical form of— $\text{Is } \text{é } \Delta \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$  . . . .  $\text{é}$ ,  $\text{an mé}\text{i}\text{o}$  . . . .  $\text{leanfáró sí } \text{óe } \text{óe}$ —the extent to which she’ll stick to it more brazenly is the length of time she’s let off ! That “time” should be a fit measure of “increase in boldness” is only accidental. The real causes of the increase in boldness were in operation as time went on, and so the passage of time is used loosely as the measure of the increase.

The following exx. from U.I. recall some of the formulae used in early mod. I.—1°  $\text{níl } \text{dá } \text{mé}\text{i}\text{o}$   $\Delta$   $\text{teactaire naó mó}\text{i}\text{oe na } \text{gnótuigte}$  (*sic*) (UP.)—The greater the envoy, the more important the business. 2°  $\text{Dá mó}\text{i}\text{oe mé}\text{i}\text{o}\text{as tu } \Delta\text{r } \Delta$   $\text{grán}\text{o}\text{a } \text{gan } \text{bonn}$ ,  $\text{dá mó}\text{i}\text{oe } \text{istigeas tu}$  (UP.)—The more you elevate an ugly person of no merit, the more you lower him. With  $\text{mó}\text{i}\text{oe}$ , here, cf.— $\text{'Sa } \text{gcu } \text{glaca re na}\text{i}\text{maro } \text{dá mó}\text{i}\text{re}$  ( $\Delta\text{ÓR. 66}$ )—And their hound in battle against the greatest foe. For



K's six ways of expressing Proportion, see "Studies in Modern Irish," Pt. IV, pp. 38-41.

213.—The 3 pl. G. pronoun **Δ** :—1° **Δ**n **ο**τιο**ς**φαι**ο** **Δ** **ο**ρμ**ο**ρ so slán ó'n **ς**co**ς**α**ο** (TBC. 29)—Whether the most of these will come safely out of the war. 2° **ο**í **Δ** **ς**com**ς**meas san **ο**e m**α**ca**ο**ib uas**α**l (TBC. 2)—I had as many more sons of Nobles (Here, so and san are absolute).

214.—The Suffixed Pronouns :—I. **ο**e :—(a) Apart from Comparatives :—**ο**í **ο**eim**ς**teac **ο**e, **ς**o n-osc**α**ló**ς**ar **Δ** **ς**úite láit**ς**reac (bñ. 585)—Be assured that his eyes will be opened promptly. (b) With Comparatives :—1° ní **ς**ea**ο**ar an **ς**ear**ο**oe í**α**o ar **ς**u**ς**as **ο**óib (S. 56)—I wonder are they anything the better of all I gave them. 2° **ο**Δ m**ο**roe mo **ς**onas ar an **ς**ao**ς**al é (Sm**ο**. 30)—My earthly happiness would have been all the greater (é, abs.). 3° ís **ς**eo**ο**oe **ο**o'n mbrat **Δ** **ο**úbl**α**o (UP.)—The blanket is the warmer for being doubled ! (Said when relations marry). The subj. here is é (understood). Another form—ís **ς**eo**ο**oe an brat **Δ** **ο**úbl**α**o—has an brat as subj. In both, **Δ** **ο**úbl**α**o is the "term" of proleptic **ο**e, and is absolute. (c) **ο**e is sometimes analeptic :—**ς**ura' m**ο**roe munn**ς**ir na cille (UP.)—May the churchyard folk increase by him ! (I.e., may he soon join them !). (d) And sometimes both analeptic and proleptic :—1° m**α** no**ς**tan**ς** fear **Δ** rún **ο**á m**ς**nao**ο**, ís **ς**io**ς**ra**ο**oe **Δ** **ς**ao**ς**al é—If a man reveal his secret to his wife, his life is thereby shortened. 2° **ο**á mbe**α**o **ο**o beo cóm **ο**íreac le**ο**' m**α**rb, **ο**Δ **ς**ia**ο**oe **ο**o **ς**ao**ς**al é (Des.)—Had you been as straight in life as you are in death, your life would have been all the longer. 3° m**α** **ο**ainmí**ο** romnt **ς**áirí aíst**ο**, ís **ς**ear**ο**oe í é—If we make her laugh a little she's all the better for it.

II.—**Δ**cu :—1° **ς**ao é sm **ο**úinne **ς**ia'cu 'tá**ς**ar soc**α**ir a**ο**ir nó ná **ς**uit**ς**ear ? (ñ. 315)—What is it to us whether they have decided on it or not ? In this type of sentence a direct rel. is used with the affirmative verb, and the neg. rel. with the second verb. This is due to sentences where the rel. had a true modal meaning. E.g., ní



féadtar cial'cu d'eimeann sé é nó ná d'eimeann—(I don't know whether he does it or not) is due to—Cial'cu mar seo nó mar siú d'eimeann sé é—where the subj. is—An cuma n-a d'eimeann sé é (the way in which he does it). In sentence 1° above, neither 'tátar nor fuittear involves any real relative meaning. 2° pé 'cu tíoceadh san mar sin nū ná tíoceadh (AR. 12)—whether that should happen or not. 3° pé 'cu bíodar cionntaí nū ná rabhadar (AR. 17)—whether they were guilty or not.

III.—Air, leis, uime, cúige, etc.—1° As brat air, so ngeobhad sé a páirt (Mac. 54)—in the hope that he would take his part. 2° Níor féadfas don tuairim a tábairt dó, cérb é an bíteamnac—I couldn't guess who the villain was. 3° Is uime céana rug Dia an daor-breat so ar na daoimib, tré cáil a cána do'n céad achair ó'r fásadhar (KTB.)—God passed this judgment of condemnation on mankind, because their first parents broke His Commandment. N.B.—In the I. sentence, there is prep. apposition.

IV.—Amhlao:—When the subject of is is omitted with proleptic amhlao a pleonastic direct rel. precedes the following vb. If neg. the particle is ná, nac, nár. This rel. does not appear when the subj. of is is expressed. The insertion of the rel. is due either :—(a) to modal clauses after *analeptic* amhlao.—Is maic liom é gá véanam mar sin, 7 is amhlao a d'eimeann sé é de gnáit—I like him to do it like that, and that's how he usually does it. (b) Or in compensation for the modal rel. always contained in the suppressed subj. Various meanings are expressed by proleptic amhlao :—

1° Descriptive :—Is amhlao a bí cruinnigte 'san áit sin rómpa stuag daome (CMO. 254)—They found there gathered together a crowd.

2° Removal of wrong impression :—Níor d'eim sé don bogadh ar an gcainnt. Is amhlao a cuir sé i bferóm i níba daingne (CMO. 260)—He did not tone down the words. On the contrary, he insisted on their literal meaning more strictly.

3° The reason :—An amhlao a bis ana-saróbir (Lúc. 46)—Is it because you were very wealthy?



4° Surprise :—An amlarò nac eol duit cad iad na cačanna a čagann uarò ? (Lúc. 56)—Don't you really know what temptations it causes ?

5° Hurt feelings :—An amlarò ba čeart do rí teacčt annso lomračta ? (Lúc. 23)—Would you have Royalty come here naked ? (Surely not !)

6° Satire :—An amlarò ba čeart dom gan bás o'fagail nuair ná raib an t-airgead agam ? (Lúc. 41)—I suppose I did wrong to die, not having the dues ! (Charon's fee).

7° Indignation :—An amlarò a beir-se ar an domne amám a maoiróiró go tčámis sé anall i n-aisge ? (Lúc. 41)—Am I to suppose that you are the only one to boast that he got across (the Styx) free ?

8° Contempt :—An amlarò a measfaó sib beic ag cainnt go tčí go scruaófaó an sioc na carbail aguib ! (TBC. 61)—I suppose you mean to keep on talking till the frost hardens your gums !

9° The Result :—Is amlarò a oem piastaí oib istis na corp (CÓ. 5)—The result was, they turned into worms in his body.

10° The Unexpected :—Is amlarò a bí sé fém žá oaraó fém rómam (Lúc. 45)—He actually condemned himself in advance of me. (Unlike the others, who blamed someone else for their own follies).

11° Explanatory :—Is amlarò a bí oeamán éim i seib mnti (CMÓ. 330)—The reason (of her infirmity) was, she was possessed by a devil.

In Conn. I. "is é an čaoi" often takes the place of "is amlarò" :—(a) 'Sé an čaoi sur réabaó ruaóos tosaig an beólin orm (SmÓ. 24)—The fact is, the first string of my violin has broken.

(b) Ačt is é an čaoi go tčámis seirbe na glór siúo (*Ibid.* 31)—But rather a bitterness crept into the woman's voice.

(c) 'Sé an čaoi sur čačtuig sé a bean (*Ibid.* 159)—the fact is, he choked his wife.

(d) Nó, an é an čaoi sur boš aoibneas na háite 7 na h-amsire a cróde ? (*Ibid.* 17)—Or, rather did the delightfulness of the place and of the weather affect her heart ? In these exx. the following clause is preceded by a conj. So, when "is amlarò" is used :—1° An



amhlaidh go raib an sean-bheirílin ag seinnt uairé féin san dorcadhas? (SmB. 7)—Could it be that the old fiddle was playing of itself in the dark? 2° b'féidir go mb' amhlaidh gur cuir gné brónac na mná bí síos (*sic*) faoi cosg leis (*Ibid.* 17)—Perhaps the fact was that the doleful look of the woman below checked it (the bird's song).

1s amhlaidh, with subj. expressed :—1° 1s amhlaidh mar atá sé, ní féidir teacht suas léi (Lúc. 13)—As a matter of fact you can't reach her. 2° 1s amhlaidh mar atá an sgeal, ní mór dúinn ardán éigin o'fáil (Lúc. 48)—This is how things stand—we must procure some elevation. 3° 1s amhlaidh mar atá an sgeal, ní dleaghtac sa tír seo an sósar do pósad ar béalaib an tsínnis (Bn. 57)—The fact is, it is not lawful in this country for the junior to marry before the senior.

215.—“ Ní misde a ráo ” (one may well think) is generally, in Munster I., followed by ná (nac, nar) :—1° Ní misde a ráo ná gur binn an ceol leis ceol na cainte sin (AR. 66)—One may well say that the music of these words was real music to him. 2° Ní misde a ráo ná go raib an teaspac 7 an móraíl bainte díob 1 sgeart (AR. 84)—One may well say that their wanton pride was lowered completely.

When the final clause is neg. there will be two negatives :—

3° Ní misde a ráo ná ná raib don fonn ortá teacht arís—One may well say they had no desire to come again.

With these uses of ná, cf. the affirmative ná of 1s sentences (247).

216.—Further remarks on proleptic a :—1° In mod. I. its “ term ” is usually absolute. In O.I. a G. in grammatical apposition was common, but this is allowed now, only after a lán, much, many, and a tuille, more, followed by an indefinite G. a lán airgid—a lot of money : a tuille aimsire—more time. But—a lán de'n airgead úo—a lot of that money ; a tuille dem' aimsir-se—more of my time. 2° In—a oiread san aimsire, airgid



(that much time, money) *a* anticipates *san* (abs.) and the G. is governed directly by *oireadó*. In *oá fáro aimsire*, the G. is governed by *fáro* (*fáro aimsire* being opposed to *fáro síge*). 3° In expressions like—*Ói sí gá innsint conus mar fuair Séadna an sparán*—She was telling how S. had secured the purse—*a* is required by I. idiom. *Innsint* (being a n.) takes the G., and as the following clause cannot assume a G. form, the relation was expressed clearly by placing the pronominal G. object (*a*) before *innsint*. 4° Proleptic *a*, thus established, spread to cases where such necessity did not exist. Thus O.I. *a masse in chuirp*—the beauty of the body. But mod. I. does not use both proleptic “*a*” and a (definite) G. If *a* is used the “term” is absolute; if G. (def.) is used there is no *a* :—*maise an cuirp* : *oá maise an corp*, etc. 5° The two modes of expression exist side by side but differ in meaning :—*bríge an sgéil*—the meaning of the business (in itself); but *a bríge an sgéil*—the significance of the matter (in reference to other things).

### 217.—The Demonstrative Pronouns :—

1° *Sim* has its *s*- aspirated sometimes, contrary to phonetic law :—(a) *na c sim í rígead c Deelsebub 'na oá curo* (CMO. 321)—Does not that mean B.'s Kingdom divided in two! (b) *Deir sé gur b sim é oíreac é*—he says that's just it.

2° *Súo*, *siúo* are often contemptuous :—(a) *ní blaispíro don fear acu súo mo bíad* (CMO. 337)—Not one of those shall taste my food! (b) *'San easonóir a cuḡad ar súo eile oó* (CMO. 222)—In regard to the dishonour those others offered Him.

3° We sometimes find *siúo*, *sim*, *so*, close together :—*ac o'fanao sé siúo go oí go oíeígead na oadome soir as triall air. ní mar sim oó so* (CMO. 171)—But the former would wait till people went over to him. Not so with the latter.

(Here *sé siúo* refers to the Baptist, relegated to a distance by the thought of Jesus; *so* refers to Christ who was engrossing their thoughts and *sim* to the Baptist's habit already mentioned).

4° *So* and *súo* are sometimes used to denote the



extreme limits of "the universe of discourse":—(a) *Ó'fás san í san aon cumas aicí ar so ná sú do ráð le n-ultuib* (TBC. 188)—This left her powerless to say one thing or another to the Ultonians. (b) *Abair-se le feargus, a fiacha, go scuirfar so 7 sú ortá* (TBC. 123)—Do you, Fiacha, tell Fergus that they shall be delayed in both ways (referred to by Fiacha).

5° So, *sú, san*, may, like other pronouns, be absolute:—(a) *má's cun san o'innisint dom a tugadh annso mé, ní misde dom beic ag mteacht* (TBC. 93)—If I was brought here simply to be told this, I may as well be going. (b) *Is móre mo mian é clos tusa beic gá ráð san liom* (PSA). *san*, abs.

6° Sometimes governed directly by preps.—(a) *Óar so 7 sú*—By this and by that! (by all the oaths). (b) *Níor deaghas ann ó som*—I never went since. In—*go dtí seo*, up to this, the pron. is N.

**218.—Interrogative Pronouns:**—Cf. Interrog. Adjs. 192-3. The clauses introduced by interrog. prons. may be N.G.D.A., or they may be absolute:—1° Nom. (a) Subj. N. to *is*:—*Is eol daoib conus mar a cuir sé comacht bur namad ar neamhíó ar bur son*—You know how that, for your sakes, He annihilated the power of your enemies. (The interrog. in *conus* is an adj. But see 220). *Is cuma cad déarfair*—It matters not what you say.

(b) Pred. N. to *is*:—*Sé rud is mó atá ag déanam buarta dom, ná cia raigadó ag triall air*—What's worrying me most is, just who will go to him.

(c) Appositional N.—*Tá sé socair aige ceana féin cad a déanfaró sé*—He has already decided on his course of action.

(d) Virtual N.—*Bí iongna orainn cad cuige an t-uisce go léir* (CMO. 112)—We wondered what all the water was for.

2° Genitive:—(a) *1 dtuob cad tá le déanam agaimn* (CMO. 124)—as to what we have to do. (b) *1 dtuob cé bí ann* (CMO. 155)—as to who it was. (c) *1 dtuob cé dó gur ceart dó an riigeacht a tabairt* (bh. 254)—as to whom he should give the Kingdom.

3° Dative:—(a) *Ar cad cuige dó beic ag déanam an*



cur-tré-céile go léir (CMO. 99)—as to why he was causing all this confusion. (b) ar cad é an saḡas an beannú san (CMO. 21)—what manner of salutation this was. (c) táim bog ar cad a measann daoine eile (TBC. 163)—my mind is easy as to other people's opinions.

4° **Accusative** :—(a) Dubairt sé leo : “Cad cuise go rabhadair ar mo lorg ?” (CMO. 72)—He said to them :—“Why did ye seek Me?” (b) Innis dúinn cé bí ann—Tell us who was there. (c) Níor tuigeadar cé bí acu (CMO. 305)—They knew not whom they had to deal with.

5° **Absolute** :—(a) Šá fiafruibe de cá dtiocfaid na huile go léir (CMO. 358)—Asking Him whence all the evils should come. (b) Tá 'fios agam cé hé tu (CMO. 155)—I know who you are. (c) Ar mísde leat a d'innis dom cé hé tu ? (bn. 573)—Would you mind telling me who you are ?

219 (a).—Ro is used by analogy with ba in interrog. sentences like—Ciarb iad na h-uaisle iasacta ? (CMO. 57)—Who were the foreign nobles ? This is due to questions containing an oblique rel.—Cárb' as iad, 7 cérb' iad fém (CMO. 57)—Where they were from, and who they were. Cf. ciar' díob tu ? = cía (níad an muinntir) ar' díob tu ?—Who are the people from whom you are sprung ? (b) The pres. tense of is is often used, though dependent on past.—Ni dubairt sé cad é an saḡas é—He didn't say what sort it was. But the past occurs also :—Cad ab' iad na fíolair (CMO. 356)—What did the eagles signify ? (c) Instead of cía'cu, we find cad é . . . . acu :—Cad é an gníom fóganta acu go measann sib gabáil de clocaib ionnam mar ḡeall air ? (CMO. 333)—Because of which of these good works do ye think of stoning Me ?

220 (a).—Exclamatory “How !”—1° Cad é mar is deacair do luēt saróbris dul isteach i ríḡeact Dé ! (CMO. 363)—How difficult it is for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God ! 2° Cad a bfuil de d'aoimib do meallad' ! (Im. 20)—How many have been deceived !

(b) **Conus**, and **conus mar** :—The interrog. in conus (cionnus) is an adj., but we may note here the difference



between *conus* (modal) and *conus mar* (non-modal) :—  
 1° *Úi mínigte go soiléir aige conus ba ceart an dlíge do éimeádo san tuit ar neamhó (CMO. 209)*—He had explained clearly how one should prevent the neutralization of the Law (modal). 2° *Conus mar a bí ag éirge leo san obair a tug sé le déanam dóib (CMO. 254)*—how that they had succeeded in the work He had given them to do. (non-modal).

**221.—Indefinite Pronouns :—***Don* is sometimes used pronominally :—1° *Ní creoraim-se ó don nac n-éireochar éamonn slán (CCU. 25)*—I shouldn't have believed from anyone but that É. would have survived. 2° *San don acu ag éirge slán (Ibid.)*. 3° *Is don mise 7 an t-athair (CMO. 333)*—The Father and I are one. 4° *Bríspó don de slíocht na mná so do ceann (CMO. 3)*—One of this Woman's offspring shall crush thy head. 5° *Don dem' cáirde sib is ead é (TBC. 149)*—He's one of my "supernatural" friends. 6° *Agus beró fíos ag na Seimtib go bfuil i n-Israel don a dmeann slánú 7 fuasgaile (bñ. 732)*—And the Gentiles shall know that there is One in Israel who heals and redeems.

**222.—The Suffixed Pronouns :—**

1° When two prep. pronouns come together one or both may dispense with the emphatic particle :—*Ní raib dume de ríogra ulaó ná raib fuat 7 miosgaís aige riam do Connactaib, 7 acu dó (TBC. 14-15)*—Not one of the Ulster princes but had always thoroughly detested the Connaught men, and they him. So, when a prep. pron. is added to a verb, and denotes a different person :—*Fé mar ba maic lib a déanfaó daoine lib, demró-se leo*—Do unto others as you would have others do unto you.

2° A prep. pron. is often used where Eng. has G. or N. :—(a) Instead of G.—*Ba maic leis . . . go sgarfaó anam le colamn aige (Im. 20)*—He would like his soul to separate from his body ; *Do bris ar an bpoirne acu (S. 226)*—Their patience became exhausted ; *Do nearcuig sé amhianta acu (Ser. 179)*—It strengthened their passions ; *Is fíor-déisgibuib agam sib feasoa (CS. 249)*—Henceforth ye are My true disciples.



(b) Instead of N.—1° An fáir is beo ar an saogal so  
 óó (Im. 21)—As long as he is alive in this world.  
 2° Do dubaig 7 do gormaig aige (S. 73)—He became  
 black and blue. 3° Nuair a gabann don ruo beag 'n-ar  
 gcomnib, tuiteann an lúg ar an lág aghainn (Im. 17)—  
 When some trifle goes against us, we collapse utterly.

### 223.—Relative Pronouns :—

I.—We sometimes find the rel. in the A. of Extent  
 in Degree :—(a) Is maic léi fíos a beic aic 1 gceart,  
 cao é an líon a táinig sac rí-fémne (TBC. 36)—She likes  
 to know exactly with what force each warrior-king has  
 come. (b) Deim airneas ar an líon a cuadar tarainn  
 soir (TBC. 63)—Calculate the number (to the extent of)  
 which they have passed us eastwards. (c) Pé méir a  
 beró tú caillte leis, tabrfaod-sa duit é, nuair a beró  
 mé ag teacht ear n-aís (CMO. 318)—Whatever you have  
 lost by him, I shall repay you on my return.

II.—The direct relatives are used for the oblique :—  
 A.—In temporal clauses. B.—In modal clauses. C.—  
 In Complex Elliptical Sentences. D.—In a somewhat  
 rare construction.

A.—1° Cá raib an t-airgead an fáir a bios ag cuardac ?  
 (S. 40)—where was the money while I was searching ?  
 (Or the rel. might here be taken as A. of Extent in  
 Time). 2° Ón lá úr a gab sé ar an mór seisear (S. 38)—  
 since the day he whipped the seven men. 3° An méir  
 aimsire a bí an t-airgead as do seib (S.)—all the time  
 the money was out of your possession. (Cf. 1°). Some-  
 times, however, we find the oblique rel.—(a) Um an  
 taca go raib a macnamh críocnuigte (S. 62)—by the  
 time he had finished his reflections. (b) 1 scaiteam na  
 n-aimsire 'n-a raib an cat ar siubal (Mac. 157)—all the  
 time that the battle was in progress. So, often, in Conn.  
 I.—(c) Tráit a mbíod an tsaoire beag aige (Smb. 129)—  
 while he had a little leisure. (d) An céad uair eile a  
 tainic peadar isteach cúicí (Smb. 141)—the next time  
 P. came in to her.

Sometimes we find both direct and oblique forms in  
 one sentence :—1° Ón lá a tánaas annso 7 gur taraisead



as an leitim mé (Eis. 88)—From the day I came here and was pulled out of the porridge (Or, gur may be explained as a conj., with ellipsis, before it, of — 7 a ráinig). 2° Nuair a táinig an t-am 'n-ar mictro do tadh Ó Ceallaigh. . . . (n. 24)—when the proper time came for T. O'C. to . . . .

B.—1° Do h-innseadh conus ab' éigin niam do tógaint as an obair sin (n. 245)—He was told how N. had to be removed from this "job." 2° B'i iongha a gcroíde ort a fearbas a d'emeadar an gnó (S. 183)—They wondered much at how well they did the thing. 3° B'féidir gur d'eme-de a déanfar an gúirde, an teacht-aireacht do cur timcheall uait-se (n. 225)—Perhaps they will pray all the harder if the message is sent round from you. 4° Is fearr is eol duitse é ná mar is eol d'aoimne eile é—You know it better than anyone else. (The clause—is eol duitse é is modal, with rel. a understood). 5° But when the compar. clause is itself relative, the following rel. clause ceases to be modal, and so the oblique rel. is used if the sense requires and allows it :— (a) Níl aoimne is fearr surb eol dó san, ná mar do eol duitse é (TBC. 1)—No one knows better than you did. (In 4° above the subj. of the 1st is is the modal clause—is eol duitse é. In 5° (a) the subj. of the 1st is is rel. a understood, and "surb eol dó san" is connected not with is fearr but with aoimne) (Double Rel. Construction, see 223, IV.), and the sense requires the oblique rel.—"to whom that is known"). (b) Tá i n-easnamh fós air an n-íó is mó n-a bfuil gá d'áise leis (Im. 85)—He is still without the thing he needs most.

The sense does not allow the oblique rel. when the D. relation appears *before* the compar. (or superl.) clause. With 5° (a) cf.—Is dó san is fearr is eol conus é déanam—he knows best how to do it. With 5° (b) cf.—Is le n-aigead is mó atá gá d'anois áise—it's money he needs most now.—This is because the last two sentences are complex elliptical forms, in which, according to 223, II. C., the direct rel. must be used for the oblique. 6° On the other hand, in sentences beginning with cia, cao, followed by a prep. pron. or prep. phrase, before the compar. (or superl.) clause, we have not complex



elliptical forms, but merely a transference of the prep. from its logical place in the sentence. Hence an oblique rel. may appear in the clause following the compar. or superl. clause :—1° *féadaint cía aise doob' fearr n-a mbeaó an t-ollmúcán déanta* (n. 180)—to see who would have made the best preparation. 2° *féadaint cía aise (ba túisge) n-a mbeaó an fosaíóeaict fóganta* (bn. 21)—to see which should (soonest) have the rich pasturage. With these two cf.—1s *asamsa is fearr a beaó an t-ollmúcán déanta*—It is I who would have made the best preparation ; 1s *asatsa is túisge a beaó an fosaíóeaict fóganta*—it is you who would have first secured the rich pasturage.—These are complex elliptical sentences, and therefore have the direct rel. (C. below).

C.—1° *ní ve a déanfi rí-ollam*—not he should be made Chief Bard. This=*ní hé* (the person already mentioned) *an té go ndéanfi rí-ollam ve*. Here the prep. *ve*, which necessitates the obl. rel. (*go*) is in the subj. But in the complex elliptical form *ve* is transferred to the pred. and so the direct rel. must appear in the subj. 2° *Óir is dóic leo gur as méro a gcamnte do n-éistfar leo* (CS. 14)—For they think that in their much speaking they may be heard. This=*gurb é méro a gcamnte an níó as a n-éistfar leo*. See remark after 1° above.

D.—1° *Cao é an ruo a bí bhrúadar ar aigne a déanam?*—What did B. intend to do? *b.* is subj. to *bí*, and we might have expected an obl. rel. The anomaly is due to analogy. *Cao é an ruo a bí as b. ar aigne a déanam*, would be quite normal. So would—*Bí b. ar aigne an ruo san a déanam*. We may look upon 1° as a *contamination* of these two (309).

2° *Sim mar a leanfaimís gan contaóairt an bótar atá tosnuigte asamn ar gabáil* (Im. 156)—Thus shall we safely keep to the road we have begun to travel.—Here the rel. may be A. of Extent in Space, after *gabáil*. Cf.—*as gabáil siar an bótar a bios*—I was going along the road westwards.

III (a).—The obl. rel. *a<sup>n</sup>*, *ar<sup>c</sup>* is used in Munster ;—



1° Immediately after a prep.—*Do meas na daoine gur é íosa an páir le n-a raib súil as na lúdaí* (CMO. 256)—The people thought that Jesus was the Prophet for whom the Jews hoped. 2° After *sul*, *sar*—before, lest.—*sul a mbeinn déirdeana* (S.)—lest I should be late. 3° In such sentences as :—*Ciar' díob tu?*—What's your surname?

(b) In U. and Conn. I. this is the chief obl. rel. in use :—1° *Cé as a dtáinig sé* (SmB. 12)—whence it came. Sometimes *go*, *gur* :—*cé'n áoi go bfuair mé bás* (SmB. 81)—how I died.

IV. **Double Relative Construction** :—(a) When we say—*Is dóic liom gur scríob dume éigin leitr*—I think someone wrote a letter—the clause *gur . . .* is subj. of *is*. But when *is* becomes rel. this construction must be dropped. *Cia is dóic leat do scríob an leitr?*—Who do you think wrote the letter? Here *is* has already its subj. in rel. *a* (understood), and the following clause cannot be conjunctive (in connection with *is*), but must be relative (in connection with the antecedent of rel.). (b) So—*Dubairt sé go ndéanfaó sé é*—He said he would do it. Here the *go*- clause is object of *dubairt*. But when we say—*Cao é an rud adubairt sé a ndéanfaó sé?* the object of the vb. is now rel. *a*, and the following clause must be relative (in connection with *rud*), not conjunctive (in connection with *dubairt*). (c) Again, if we wish to say, in I.—He is still without the thing he needs most—there being no superl. (or compar.) adverb in mod. I.—we must have recourse to Double Relative Construction : *Tá m-easnamh fós air an ní*—1° (*a*) *is mó*—2° *n-a bfuil gá aige leis*.

The two conditions required for Double (or Multiple) Relative Construction are :—1° Co-ordination in construction—the relatives must have the same antecedent. 2° Subordination in meaning—each rel. clause must limit the meaning of the other (or others). The following combinations occur :—

1° Both relatives N.—(a) *Ac ní hé an gluaisceán is mó bí as cur air* (SmB. 113)—But it wasn't the motor that worried him most. (b) *Níl domne is fearr a dtáinig*



as ná mise (TBC. 6)—No one escaped better than I did.

(c) 'Dein-se anois an ruo is dóic leat is fearr (Lúc. 49)—Do you now what you think is best.

2° First Rel. N., second A.—(a) Cad ba máit leat a déanfaimn duit (CMO. 367)—What would you have me do for you? (b) Iarr orm an nío is máit leat a tabrfaimn duit (bh. 477)—Ask me what you wish me to give you.

3° First Rel. A., second N.—(a) b'sin é síl Antome bí uirri (SmB. 26)—That was what A. thought was wrong with her. (b) A lán scéalaíreácta i rtaob neite deir-tear a duit amac (CMO. 66)—many stories concerning things which they say happened. (If deir-tear is passive both relatives are N.).

4° Both A.—(a) An ruo a meas sé dearfais (CMO. 177)—What he thought they'd say. (b) Sin obair nár measas a déanfi orainn (TBC. 71)—That's a thing I didn't think would be done to us. (Déanfi, Autonomous).

5° First Rel. N., second D.—níl domne is fearr surb eol dó san ná mar tob' eol duitse é (TBC. 1)—No one knows that better than you did.

6° First Rel. N., second temporal D.—An fáro ba dóic leis a bí domne de slíocht na Macabéac beo (CMO. 9)—As long as he thought any descendant of the M. was alive.

7° First Rel. N., second direct for oblique in complex elliptical clause :—Ar cátair Ierúsalem is ead is fearr a bí an cáoi aige ar an rtreit sin a o' oibriú—It was on the city of J. he had the best opportunity of putting this trait (aesthetic taste) in practice. This is the complex elliptical form of—Is í cátair l. an áit is fearr n-a raib an cáoi aige ar an rtreit sin a o' oibriú air.

8° First rel. A., second direct for oblique (local D.) in complex elliptical clause :—I mBetlehem adubairt na tarfaireactaí a béarfi an slánuigteoir (CMO. 40)—It was in B. the prophecies said the S. would be born.= Is í b. an áit adubairt . . . na mbéarfi. . . . When in is transferred to the pred. it is omitted in the subj., which therefore has the direct rel. for the oblique :—(Is) i mB. adubairt . . . a béarfi. . . .

9° First rel. N. or A., second, G.—Tá . . . . tagaite orm buairt nár measas riam surb féoir a leicéir do



teacht ar mnáoi (TBC. 133)—A worry has come upon me, the like of which I never thought could fall upon a woman. N.B.—If *nár* be understood as a conj. (as it may be—*buairt* “*cóm mór san*” *nár* . . . .) then *sur* will be a conj. also.

10° First rel. local D. second the same :—*'Sa n-áit 'n-ar dóic le Críostaire sur ceart an altóir a beic* (CMO. 146)—where a Christian would think the altar ought to be.—The two clauses logically involved are :—(a) *'Sa n-áit* (a) *ba dóic le C.* (b) *'Sa n-áit n-ar ceart* . . . . When the oblique rel. of (b) is transferred to (a), the direct rel. of (a) is usually transferred to (b), giving—*'Sa n-áit n-ar dóic le C. ba ceart* . . . . (with direct rel. *a* understood before *ba*). But *sur* may be a conj. Thus—*ba dóic le C. sur* . . . . *ann*, is made rel. by transferring the prep. in *ann* to the rel. *ar*.—*'Sa n-áit n-ar dóic* . . . . *sur ceart* . . . .

11. First rel. D., second N. (by “Inversion,”—see preceding ex.)—*Ói gac domne as breicniú na h-aimsire n-ar dóic leo a beaó an t-áró-Rí as teacht a baile* (N. 210)—Everyone was looking forward to the time when they thought the High-King would be coming home.—The two clauses involved are :—(a) *na h-aimsire* (a) *ba dóic leo* (Rel. N.) and (b) *na h-aimsire 'n-a mbeaó* (Rel. D.). But the direct and oblique forms are transposed. This “Inversion” is quite common. See next ex.

12° First rel. neg. loc. D., second direct (By “Inversion,” for A.—local D.).—*Cao é a mnicige a fuaras é san áit nár measas a geobaimn é* (Im. 187)—How often have I found it where I never expected to find it ! The clauses involved are :—(a) *sa n-áit nár measas* (Rel. neg. A.) ; (b) *sa n-áit n-a bfuigimn é* (Rel. loc. D.). Inversion has taken place. But, as *nár* may be either direct or oblique, the 1st clause remains as it was, the change being apparent only in the 2nd clause.

13° First rel. temporal D., second, the same (Direct for oblique in both) :—(a) *Nuair is dóic leo a bío as molaó a céite, is as cámeaó a céite a bío*—When they think they are praising each other, it is just then they are finding fault.—The stress is on the point of time. If it were on the contrast between what they are actually



doing, and what they imagine they are doing, it would run thus :—(b) *Is as cáineadh a céile a bío siad, nuair is dóic leo go mbíod siad as molaíod a céile* (Im. 206)—It's blaming each other they are, when, as they think, they are praising each other !

14° Both clauses modal (Direct for oblique in both):—  
 (a) *Ní duibairt sé na focail lom díreac mar a teastuig uatha a déanfaíod sé* (CMO. 333)—He didn't say the words precisely as they wanted. (b) *Bí cneasta leis, fé mar ba maítt leat a beirí leat féin* (Im. 22)—Be gentle with him, as you would like to be treated yourself. (c) *Deimrò go léir díreac mar a cífrò sib a déanfaíod-sa* (bh. 278)—Do ye all exactly as ye shall see me do. (d) *Čosnuig neite ar teact cun cinn fé mar a meas Seleucas a čioc-parois* (bh. 757)—Things began to come to a head, as S. thought they would. These exx. (14°) show the "spread" of Double Rel. Construction, and there is something abnormal in each. In (a) *teastuig* has no grammatical subj. In (b) *ba* has no grammatical subj. In (c) *cífrò* has no grammatical obj. Nor in (d) has *meas*.

### V. Multiple Rel. Sentences :—

1° *Deirim leat gurb é seo an cuma adubairt sé ba dóic leis ab' fearr a čaitnfeadh le cáč*—I tell you that this is the way he said he thought would best please everyone. Four rel. clauses, co-ordinate in construction, and subordinate in meaning :—(a) *an cuma adubairt sé* (Rel. A.) ; (b) *an cuma ba dóic leis* (Rel. N.) ; (c) *an cuma ab' fearr* (Rel. N.) ; (d) *an cuma a čaitnfeadh* (Rel. N.).

2° *Cia hé is dóic leat adubairt sé do measadur ab' fearr a déanfaíod an gníom?*—Who think you did he say they thought would be the best to do the deed? Five co-ordinate clauses, each, however, qualified in meaning by the others :—(a) *an té (a) is dóic leat*. (b) *an té adubairt sé*. (c) *an té do measadur*. (d) *an té ab' fearr*. (e) *an té a déanfaíod*.

### VI. Negative Relatives :—

(a) *ná* is used in Munster, outside the past tense, with all verbs, except *is*. In U. and Conn. *nac* is usual.



(b) *nac*, everywhere, as direct and obl. rel. with *is* (outside past tense).

(c) *nár*, with past and condit. of *is*, and the past of other verbs [except those in which *ro* combines with the vb. itself (*raib*), and verbs which do not take *ro*—(*ruair*) ].

### VII. The Relative in Compar. and Superl. Clauses :—

(a) *Níl doimne is fearr gurb eol dó é ná mar is eol duit-se é*—No one knows it better than you do.

(b) *Sin é an rud is fearr atá ar eolas aige*—That's what he knows best.

(c) Note that the I. for "that is the best thing he knows" is :—*Sin é an rud is fearr dá bfuil ar eolas aige*.

VIII. Interrogative and Relative :—Contrast—1° *Cao cuige go ndubairt sí ná raib don maic innti?* 2° *Cao cuige adubairt sí ná raib don maic innti?* 1° is a single rel. question—why did she say she was no good? 2° is a double rel. question—what was it that she said she was no good at?

Similarly :—(a) *Catoin adubairt sé go ndéanfaó sé é?* (b) *Catoin adubairt sé a déanfaó sé é?* (a) is a single rel. question—when did he make the statement that he would do it? (b) is a double rel. question—when, did he say, he would do it? (referring to the time of the doing, not of the statement).

IX. The Compound Relative :—The following combinations occur :—

A.—Both antecedent and rel. N.—*Bí gac ar cóir 7 ar cuibe a déanam dóib déanta aige dóib* (CMO. 137)—He had done for them everything it was right and fitting to do for them=*gac níó (a) ba cóir*. Anteced. N. to *bí*; rel. N. to *ba*.

B.—Both anteced. and rel. A.—*Déanfaó a ndéarfair uiom a déanam*—I'll do everything you tell me. Anteced. A. after *déanfaó*; rel. A. governed by *déarfair*.

C.—Anteced. A., Rel. N.—*agus gac a mbameaó do leigistí ias* (CMO. 258)—and all who touched (the hem of His cloak) were healed.—Anteced.—Projected A. (N. if *leigistí* is passive); rel. N. to *bameaó*.



D.—Anteced. N., rel. A.—*Tógfar uairé gac a measann sé atá aige*—All he thinks he has shall be taken from him.—Anteced.—N. to *tógfar* (if passive); rel. A. governed by *measann*. There is Double Rel. Construction here. If the 2nd clause were alone it would be—*gac a bfuil aige*.

E.—Anteced. D., Rel. N.—*Deiré leagaint síos ar sheomíní, 'Sa maireann de n-a bpóir (p. 31)*—Shoneens and all survivors of their seed shall be put down! Anteced. D. (or A.) gov. by *ar*. Rel. N. to *maireann*.

F.—Anteced. D., Rel. A.—*Tá díolta acu linn as ar d'eimeadair d'éascóir riam orainn (TBC. 146)*—They have paid us for all the wrongs they ever did us.—Anteced. D. gov. by *as*. Rel. A. gov. by *d'eimeadair*.

G.—Both Anteced. and Rel. D.—1° *Marbuiḡad an uile rud i bfuirm dume de shioct gaeḡeal dár féadadair teact suas leis (Sg. 54)*—They slew everything in the shape of human Irishman they could reach. Anteced. D. gov. by *de*; rel. D. (A) gov. by *le* (in *leis*). 2° *Gráḡmar tar gac níḡ dár tús dume gráḡ dḡ riam fós (Im. 248)*—Loveable beyond anything man ever yet loved.—Anteced. D. gov. by *de*; Rel. D. gov. by *do*. 3° *Táinig amac as an loḡ an capall dḡb' áilne dár leḡas mo súil riam air (Br. 33)*—There came out of the lake the most beautiful horse I ever laid eyes on.—Anteced. D. gov. by *de*; Rel. D. (A.) gov. by *ar*. 4° *Má caitḡann tu gac dḡbent dḡ b'áḡfar ar an saḡal so tu*—If you spend every Advent during which you're left in this world . . . . Anteced. D. gov. by *de*. Rel. oblique temporal D. (or A. of Extent in Time).

For fuller consideration of these exx. see 310.

H.—Anteced. G., Rel. N. (A.).—*Ac bí uaisle ar na samaratánaḡ in-éaḡmais ar marbuiḡad (Mac. 274)*—But there were others amongst the S. besides those who were slain. Anteced. G. gov. by *éaḡmais*. Rel. N. (or A. if *marbuiḡad* is Auton.).

I.—Anteced. N., Rel. G.—*Sm a bfuil fíos aḡam (bn. 454)*—That's all I know.

J.—Anteced. absolute; Rel. N. or A.—*ní fearḡe iad ar túsas dḡib (S.)*—I wonder are they improved by my gifts.



## CHAPTER V.

### SYNTAX OF THE VERB.

---

#### The Copula.

224.—*is* is merely a logical copula, and forms no part of the predicate. *E.g.*—1° It must never be stressed. If it were a real predicate it would be stressed, when emphatic, like all other verbs (which are real predicates or part-predicates). 2° One cannot answer a question with *is* alone, although one can with practically every other verb. Why? Because *is* by itself conveys no information—is not a predicate. Since it is never stressed, and is not a predicate, it is used to introduce the predicate. This gives us the rule for all (or nearly all) *is* sentences:—(a) VS. (Verb-Subj.) must always be avoided. (b) VP (p) (Verb-Pred.) must always be secured. (When the vb. is expressed. If *is* is often omitted). N.B.—P (p). P=the real pred. p=one of the prons.—*é, í, 1αο, εαο*, used to take its place. The real pred. is often too long, or too cumbrous, to come immediately after *is*, in which case one of these prons. takes its place. Or P. is placed elsewhere, to secure some special shade of meaning, and in this case also p. must take its place. The rule may be put, graphically, thus:—(a) —VS. (b) +VP (p). The rule does *not* say:—1° That we must begin with the vb. That is not necessary and is often impossible. 2° That P., the real pred. must come immediately after *is*. That is not necessary, either, and is often impossible. 3° That the subj. must come last. Unnecessary, also, and often impossible. The rule, in fact, says nothing about the position of the subj. except negatively; nor of P., except that, *if* it does not follow *is* immediately, then “p” must take its place.



**225 (a).** Subj. and Pred.—The grammatical subj. is the word, or group of words, pointing out the person, place, name, thing or group, about which the assertion (or denial) is made, or the question asked. The grammatical pred. is the word, or group of words, pointing out what is affirmed, denied, or queried about what the subj. denotes.

(b) Any word or group capable of being subj. or pred. is called a "term." The pred. is either definite or indefinite. A pred. is definite when it is an individual term; indefinite, when it is a general term.

(c) An individual term is one which can be asserted, in the same sense, of only one person, place or thing, or one group,—*Σέαδνα*, an peann so—*Σέαδνα*, this pen. A general term is one which may be applied, in the same sense, to each of an indefinite number of persons, places, things, names or groups :—*οὔμε*, *πάιρε*, *βόρο*, *πάτραις* (see 261) *στὰς*—person, field, table, Patrick, company.

**226.**—This gives us the division of 1s sentences into—  
A.—Classification (pred. indefinite). B.—Identification (pred. definite). In C.—Complex Elliptical sentences, the pred. is either def. or indef. (so that this class is a sub-division of A. and B.).

A.—**Classification Sentences** :—Type I.—The pred. is a common noun. The subj. may be a noun, pron., phrase or clause :—

1° *1s oncú do Connachtaið an cú, 1s mí-clú do Connachtaið a clú* (TBC. 96)—The "Hound" (Cúchulainn) is a wolf to Connaught-men, his fame, to them, is ill-fame. 2° *1s bean san eagla mise* (TBC, 3)—I am a fearless woman, *san eagla* narrows down the meaning of *bean*, but not completely. It remains a general term. 3° *ní fios conus oirfeadh do congnam dúinn* (TBC. 15)—There's no knowing how your help might suit us. The subj. here is the complex noun—*conus . . . . dúinn*.

**227.**—Type II.—The pred. is an adj. (equivalent to a common noun) :—1° *1s buan san sgar sul na sgarite* (CCu. 19)—The moaning of the wind continues un-



ceasingly. 2° 1s mīnīc sáoi ó óáoī (UP.)—Often a clown's son is a sage. 3° 1s fearr fuigeall an máthar ná fuigeall an mágar—Better the leavings of the dog than those of the cynic! 4° 1s fearr leat ná meāt—"Half a loaf is better than no bread."

228.—Type III.—The pred. is an adj. but the subj. involves a rel. clause :—1° 1s trom an t-uallac ámeolas (UP.)—Ignorance is a heavy burden, Subj. an t-uallac (a 1s) ámeolas, 2° 1s maic an saogal é—má máireann sé i bpaó—The times are good—if they last long, (Said to foolish young people), Subj.—an saogal (a 1s) é. 3° 1s cruair an áinnic i sin (CMO, 260)—These are hard words, Subj. an áinnic (a 1s) i sin. 4° ní maic an tuic páire sib (bn. 407)—You are but indifferent guards. Subj. an tuic páire (a 1s) sib.

229.—Type IV.—The pred. appears to be a proper n. but is really a general term :—1° Agus (1s) éamonn a áthair (S. 20)—And his father is "an E." also. 2° 1s "Connla" a bíor ag niam air—N. called him "Connla." Subj. of 1s :—an ainm a bíor ag n. air. The sentence is nominal. 3° Dubairt sé gur ásarías ab ainm dó (bn. 574)—He said his name was A.

230.—Type V.—The pred. is a prep. pron., or prep. phrase.—1° 1s dóic liom go raib sí ingrád leis go mór tamall (TBC. 5)—I think she was very much in love with him for a while.—The pred. dóic liom=a thing likely in my opinion. 2° Ac ní creideann sib-se, mar ní dem' áoire-se sib (CMO. 333)—But you do not believe, for you are not of My Flock.

231.—Emphatic Forms :—Type VI.—1° Créad mēigte amúda ab ead id (CMO. 245)—They were a strayed flock. 2° Uaigneas san áitreab is ead an áit seo (CMO. 255)—This place is a homeless desert. 3° Rógaire fill ab ead é (bn. 807)—He was a treacherous rogue. 4° longna saogail ab ead an leact san (bn. 826)—This monument was a world's wonder. N.B.—(a) The predicates here are very strong, and call for an emphatic



position. (b) The pron. *eað* must be inserted after the vb. in order to avoid "VS."

232.—Type VII.—Emphatic form of II. 1° *Olc* is *eað an peacað*—Sin is an evil. Type III has no more emphatic form. The adj. pred. there is already very strongly emphasized.

233.—Type VIII.—Emphatic form of Type IV. 1° *Alba* is *eað is ainm do'n críð sin*—A. is the name of that country. 2° *Finnbeannað* is *eað is ainm do*—Whitehorn is his name (English often begins with the logical predicate).

234.—Type IX.—Emphatic form of Type V.—*Uinn-ne ab eað an réir* (MSp.)—The moor belonged to us. N.B.—Some exx. of Type V are not emphasized by means of *eað* and the projected predicate. E.g.—*Is é is doic liom go raib sí i ngráð leis . . .* is stronger than 230, 1°, but is an Identification sentence of the Type VpSP. (246).

235.—Type X.—*Cailín gur ainm ví gile na mbliat*—A girl named G. na mB. It has been said that *g. na mb.* (the grammatical subj.) is the logical pred., and that *ainm ví* (the grammatical pred.) is the logical subj. This is wrong. If we wish to make *g. na mb.* pred. we have two ways of doing so :—(a) *Cailín gur g. na mb. ab ainm ví.* (b) *Cailín gur é ainm ví uircti g. na mb.*

236.—Type XI.—In the last ex. in 235 the pred. remains indefinite. It means "a name spelled—*g-i-l-e*," etc. Such sentences must be distinguished from Type II b, Identification (247). The particle *ná*, which precedes the pred. there, has found its way into the present Type also :—1° *Is é ruð a bí aige ná céad oit noic a cúig de míltiú corp* (Bn. 569)—He found himself with only 185,000 corpses ! 2° *Is é ainm a bí air ná Séanna* (S. 6)—His name was S. 3° *Is é céadchrann tarla dhó soileach mhór* (BK. 1)—The first tree he met was a large willow.



**237.—Type XII.**—*Ód mba ná beaó sé faǵáiltea roim ré aise* (S. 67)—if he had not got it beforehand. Usually explained by saying that the pred. *ruo*=a fact, is understood. It is more satisfactory to take *ná . . . . aise* as pred. with subj. understood at the end (*é*=the state of affairs in question).

**238.—Type XIII.**—SVP.—The subj. is a rel. and must come first. *1° Níl doimne is fearr a tāmuis as ná mise* (TBC. 6)—No one has come out of it better than I. The subj. (rel. *a*) is understood before *is*. There is Double Rel. Construction (223, IV).

**239.—Type XIV.**—A long pred. is often divided, the fundamental noun coming first, then VpS+the remainder of pred. This we may call “The Split Predicate”. *1° fīr ab’ eaó iao ná leogfaó a scroíoe ná a n-aise oóib fanamamc sa baile*—They were men whose hearts or minds would not allow them to stay at home. *2°* This is usual, also, when the pred., though short, contains a rel.—*Dean is eaó i ná fuil puinn céille aicī*—She’s a woman of but little sense. Conn. I. sometimes does not avail of this order :—*Dean nár tug sé don áiró uirri ariam b’eaó i siúo* (Smb. 184)—Instead of *Dean ab’ eaó i siúo nár . . . .*

**240.—Type XV.**—SVPs.—The subj. is projected for emphasis, and a pron. (*s*) takes its place at the end :—*1° An teagdas so a tugaim-se, ní liom é* (CS. 245)—This doctrine which I give is not Mine (Much better than—*Ní liom . . . .*). *2° Óir an áit na bfuilir do’ seasam, is talam naomta é* (bn. II. 1)—For the place where thou standest is holy ground.

**241.—Type XVI.**—SPVps.—*Na sgéaltea beaga san a o’innseao íosa, neite ab eaó iao a tuit amac* (CMO. 318)—These little stories which J. told were things that had happened. This is much neater than—*neite o tuit amac ab eaó na sgéaltea . . .* Note the split predicate (239).



242.—Type XVII.—PS. The verb is omitted :—  
 1° *násaret ainm an báile sin* (CMO. 17)—The name of this village was N. 2° *muire ab' ainm dí* (CMO. 331)—Her name was M. 3° *faða céir teist an omis* (AOR. 210)—Far fares the fame of generosity. 4° *Tríú a gníreas treabha* (UP.)—It is rivalry that makes good ploughing (*Tríú*=M. *tnút*).

243.—Type XVIII.—SP.—*An cuairt is fearr cuairt gearr* (UP.)—The best visit is a short one. Another way of saying *cuairt gearr* (*is ea*) *an cuairt is fearr*.

244.—Type XIX.—PsS.—*Cao é an donas é seo atá ar siúbal?* (TBC. 157)—What's all this mischief that's going on? *Cao* is pred. N. to *is*. *É* is proleptic subj. (s), the real subj. being *an donas* (*a is*) *é seo*, etc.

#### B.—Identification Sentences :—

245.—Type I.—VpPS.—1° *is é leigheas na loðar is mó cuireadh iongha 7 alltacht ar gach doimne* (CMO. 162)—It was the curing of the lepers that most amazed everyone. 2° *is é briathar Dé an síol* (CMO. 232)—The seed is the Word of God. 3° *'Sí an dias is truime is iste cromas a ceann* (UP.)—The heaviest ear most lowly bends its head (A commendation of Humility). 4° *'Sé an t-éadaic a gní an t-óime* (UP.)—Clothes make the man.

246.—Type II. a.—VpSP.—Two reasons for the evolution of this Type :—(a) A long cumbrous pred., if placed immediately after *is*, would have spoiled the sentence. It is, therefore, put at the end, a pronoun taking its place after *is*, in order to avoid VS! 1° *Agus is é freagra a fuair sé :—“Amgeal is ea mise. Is mé an trínað h-amgeal gur tuisce déirce dó moiu ar son an tsílanuigheora. Agus anois tá trí gúir agat le faḡáil ó Dia na glóire. Iarr ar Dia don trí gúir is toil leat 7 geobair iad. Ac tá don cómairle amáin agam le tabairt duit. Ná dearmad an trócaire.”* Here the pred. contains six complete sentences, and could not possibly be put immediately after *is*. (b) To put even a short pred. after *is* would sometimes sacrifice some important shade



of meaning. A vivid, rhetorical form is required, and Type II supplies it :—2° *Is é is fada liom go mberò an baiste sin déanta* (CMO. 326)—I long exceedingly to have that baptism accomplished. 3° *B'é b'fada leis go raib sé amuis* (S. 39)—The one thing he longed for was to get out (See note on this sentence, "Studies in Modern Irish," Pt. I, 16-17).

247.—Type II. b.—VpS *ná* P.—More vivid and rhetorical than the preceding, and should be used only when rhetoric is justified.—1° *B'é cómartha é sin ná a bás 7 a aiséirge féin* (CMO. 274)—This sign meant precisely His own death and resurrection. 2° *Sé ruo a d'eim íosa ná ceist a cur cúca* (CMO. 336)—J. simply put them a question. 3° *Is é ruo a d'eim sé ná an breic do cur ar a t-ia* (Mac. I, 59)—He simply postponed the judgment. 4° *B'i seoir í sin ná b'aisti* (bn. 616)—The treasure I mean was Vashti.

248.—Type II. c.—VpS *ac* P.—Canon O'Leary does not use this. But his books are full of the rhetorical questions and negations from which this type has developed.—1° *Cia g'eobad tar an n'oorus ac Séana?* (S. 89)—Who should pass the door but S? This leads to—*b'é dume g'ad tar an n'oorus ac S.* 2° *Níor d'eim sé ac éirge 7 mteact amac* (CMO. 175)—He just rose up, and went out. The information given here can be conveyed in at least seven different ways, each with its own shade of meaning :—(a) *D'éirig sé 7 d'mtig sé amac* (Bald statement of fact). (b) *Do d'eim sé éirge 7 mteact amac*—He *deliberately* rose and went out. (c) *Níor d'eim sé ac éirge 7 mteact amac*—He *simply*, etc. (d) *Cad a d'eantad sé ac . . . .* (Rhetorical). (e) *'Sé ruo a d'eim sé . . . .* [More vivid than (b) or (c)]. (f) *Sé ruo a d'eim sé ac . . . .* [more vivid still than (e)]. (g) *Sé ruo a d'eim sé ná . . . .* (most vivid of all).

249.—Type II. d.—VpS *mar* P.—Here, *mar* is pleonastic, just as "because" is, sometimes, in E. We say—(a) He stayed at home (the fact), because he was unwell. So, in I.—*O'fan sé sa baile, mar ní raib sé*



ar pógnaím. (b) A rhetorical form :—E.—The reason why . . . . was (because) he was unwell. I.—'Sé cúis gur fan sé sa baile (mar) ná raib sé ar pógnaím :—Dubhairt sé gur é cúis n-a ndéiḡ sé i bfolac, mar go raib eagal air (bn. 3)—He said he went into hiding, because he was afraid.

250.—Development of ná :—1° From neg. ná in :—(a) rhetorical questions. (b) rhetorical negations ; 2° comparative ná.

1°a :—Cia déarfadó ná gur deaḡ-úime é ?—Who will say he wasn't a good man ? This leads to—sé déarfadó ḡac doimne (ná) gur v.v. é.

1°b :—Ní bíod fíos aḡ doimne ná gur úime de munnair na tíre é (n. 138)—No one knew but that he was one of the natives. This leads to—'Sé ceapadó ḡac doimne (ná) gur úime, etc.

2° Níl don cuma is fearr cum na hoibre déanaím ná an ḡaolumm do ḡaotrú ins na h-áiteanaib 'na bfuil sí beo pós—There's no better plan for accomplishing the work than to work up I. wherever it is still living. This leads to—'Sé cuma is fearr . . . . ná . . . . The mod. compar. and superl. having the same form helps this assimilation.

251.—Type III.—VpSP.—In Type II the subj. contains a rel. clause, implicit or explicit. In Type III the subj. is simple—a noun preceded by the art., or followed by an adj. Contrast with Type I.—1° Gurb í an íomáig úo an nádúir ódonna (KTB. 3)—That that image represents human nature. 2° 'Sé an namáo an peacadó (Ser.)—Sin is the enemy (E. begins with the logical pred.). The context shows that Can. O'L. was writing about "the enemy" not "sin." The same words, in the same order, might be a sentence in Type I. One might be talking of sin and saying that it is the enemy. We must look to the context to guide us as to which Type is in question.

252.—Type IV.—PVpS.—The pred. here, as in Type VI. Classification, is projected, for rhetorical effect.—



1° An bean cosnoctaithe is í a bí ann (S.)—It was none other than the bare-footed woman. 2° An níò is creto-eamant dóib is é is mian leo a séanao—The very thing that is a credit to them they want to disown. (E., as I., often begins with the logical predicate). 3° An níò atcí an leanb is é a gníò an leanb (UP.)—What the child sees, that the child does. 4° 'Té cuireas 'sé bameas (UP.)—He who sows reaps. 5° An luib ná fachtar is í fóireann (Proverb)—The herb that helps cannot be found.

253.—Type V.—PS.—1° eoin baiste an mac san (CMO. 17)—This child was John the Baptist. 2° Iomao na lám a bameas an cat (UP.)—Its the number of hands that wins the battle. 3° Na méara na súile is géire bíos as ball (Smb. 66)—The fingers are the sharpest eyes of the blind.

254.—Type VI.—SP.—1° Mise caitin an Tigearna (CMO. 19)—Behold the Handmaid of the Lord. 2° Beata teanga í labhairt—If a language is to live, it must be spoken. 3° Caibair an boctám béal na h-uaiqe (UP.)—The mouth of the grave is the poor man's refuge. 4° Ceo ar abainn, ceo an tsonais, Ceo ar cnoc ceo an donais (UP.)—A river-mist is prosperous, a hill-mist unfortunate. N.B.—Type V is related to Type I or Type IV, in both of which P precedes S. But Type VI is related to Type II, in which S. precedes P. Type V therefore, when dependent, becomes Type I or Type IV :—An ruo is annam is iongantac (V) becomes Type I :—Deir an seanfocal gurb é an ruo is annam is iongantac. Or—Type IV—Deir an seanfocal an ruo is annam gurb é is iongantac. But—Tir gan teanga tír gan anam (VI) becomes Type II :—Deir an seanfocal gurb é safas tír gan teanga ná tír gan anam.

255.—Type VII.—VPS.—The pred. is a pers. pron. 1 or 2 p., or a demonstrative, 3 p., or a pers. pron. strengthened by féin :—1° Má's tu an Críost (CMO. 333)—If Thou art the Christ. 2° Measaim gurb í féin is fearr a tuig a camnt (CMO. 113)—I judge that She



herself understood His words best. 3° *mar is tu do réab mo éoróe ó céite* (CCU. 50)—For it is you who have torn my heart asunder.

256.—Type VIII.—VpPS.—Same as Type I, except that the subj. is here one of the prons. which are preds. in VII. It has been said that in Ident. sentences these prons. must always be pred. This is wrong :—1° *An é an cárta dub é sin ? ní hé, ac an cárta bán*—Is that *the black card* ? No, but *the white one*. *An é sin an c. o ?* = Is *that* the black card ? And the answer would be, e.g., *ní hé ; sin é é*—No—here it is. The same Eng. words, in the same order, convey at least three different meanings :—(a) Is *that* the b. c ? *An é sin an c. o ?* (b) Is that the *black* c ? *An é an c. o. é sin ?* (c) Is that the b. *card* ? *An é an cárta o. é sin ?* (with emphasis on *cárta*). There is a tendency (a very wrong tendency) to make (a) do duty for all three. 2° *Is é mo corp é seo*—This is My Body—This is the correct translation of “Hoc est Corpus Meum.” 3° *Is é Críst Mac Dé sin* (Dott. II, 13)—This is Christ the Son of God. Cf.—4° *So fíor do é mac Dé é sin* (C.S. 83)—Truly, this was the Son of God.

257.—Type IX.—VpSP.—The same as Type II. a., except that the proleptic pron. is *eað*. It is common in the literature down to the early modern period :—1° *Is eað adubairt “ ní tabair dúine uair an níð nac bí aige ”* (KTB. 8)—This is what he said :—“ One does not give away what one has not.” 2° Common in “ *mar o eað* ” when the *eað* is proleptic :—*mar o eað go raib sé ar meisge*—pretending that he was drunk. *É* (understood)=the state of affairs, is subj. of *o* (=bað).

258.—Type X.—SVpPs.—1° *An té adubairt an éamnt sin, b'é a sceann go léir é* (CMO. 366)—He who said these words was the Head of them all. The *projection* emphasizes the subj. The reference is to our Lord. 2° *An ruo gur dóic leis an nouine gurb é a teas é* (CMO. 195)—What one imagines is for one's good.—This could hardly be put neatly in any other form.



259.—Type XI.—PsS.—1° *Cao iad na neite is gáta-  
aige?* What are the most necessary things? A definite  
answer is expected. 2° *Cia hé an fear é sin?* Who's  
that man?  $P=Cia$ ;  $s=é$ ;  $S. an fear é sin.$

260.—Type XII.—SVP.—In relative sentences like—  
*Is é Iosa is Críost ann*—Jesus is the Christ. A sentence  
of Type I, but the subj. (*an té a is Críost ann*) is Type  
XII.— $S=A$  (rel. understood).  $P.=Críost.$

261.—Note on Proper Names.—There are at least four  
uses of words like *Éamonn*:—1° *aḡus (is) Éamonn a aḡair*  
(S. 20)—and his father is “an *Éamonn*” also. *Éamonn*  
*indefinite*. 2° *Is é Éamonn pé nḡéar é*—It is *É.* who is  
responsible. *Éamonn* definite—an individual term.  
3° *Éamonn is ainm ḡó*—his name is *É.* Here *É.* does not  
point out a person at all, but a name. It means—“a  
name spelled *É-a-m-o-n-n*” and is therefore indefinite.  
4° *Sé ainm a bḡ air ná Éamonn.*—A nominal sentence  
like 3°. *É.* indefinite.

262.—The proleptic pron. in Type I. Ident. is due to  
Types II, III, and IV. In these the pron. is absolutely  
essential (in order to avoid VS). Without adverting to  
the fundamental difference between these and Type I.  
people began to insert the pron. in the latter. But a  
definite noun may come immediately after *is* (even  
outside Type XII, where such is nearly always the  
case):—1° *Ní h-anois an céad uair a bḡ aicne curḡa  
aḡat ar m' fḡirḡ (lúc. 14)*—This is not the first time  
you'll have experienced my anger. 2° *Is anois é (CS.  
223)*—It is now. 3° *Ní h-mḡu ná mḡé a cúireas aicne  
ort*—It isn't to-day or yesterday I came to know you.

All these predicates contain the definite article.

### C.—Complex Elliptical Sentences:—

263.—1° *Ní mar ḡeall ar foclaib camnte ḡo molḡar  
tú (lúc. 4)*—It is not for mere words you will be praised=  
*ní focail camnte an nḡo ḡo molḡar tú mar ḡeall air.*  
(Pred. indef. Observe the direct rel. *ḡo* in the first  
form). 2° *Is ḡóm-sa ḡo ḡeallaḡ í ḡ is ormsa aḡá an  
feall vḡanta (TBC. 196)*—It was to me she was pro-



mised, and it is I who have been betrayed=*is mise an té gur gealladh dó í, 7 is mise an té ar a bfuil an peall déanta* (Preds. definite). 3° *is ó tuair cun Gaillili a tug sé aghair* (CMO. 313)—He turned northwards to Gallilee=*is í an áirde tuair cun 5. an áirde ar ar tug sé aghair* (Pred. definite). 4° *ní liomsa a bameann an camnt sin*—Those words do not refer to me=*ní mise an té go mbameann an camnt sin leis* (Pred. definite). All such sentences should be expanded in this way, to secure a clear subj. and a clear predicate.

### Idioms with the Verb *is*.

264 (a).—The prep. *le* with certain adj. preds. denotes the subjective view ; *do* the objective fact :—*an ruo is féidir leat, is féidir duit é*—What you *think* you can do, you *can* do. (b) Idioms with *beag, mór* :—

1° *nár cóir nár beag dí a bfuil aici ceana díob* (TBC. 15)—Ought she not to be satisfied with what she has of them already ?

2° *is beag acu saibbreas gan mórclú* (TBC. 35)—They think little of riches without reputation.

3° *ní ró-mór agham-sa é* (TBC. 53)—I don't think very much of him.

4° *ba beag agham mo saogal a beit buan nó díombuan* (TBC. 63)—I cared little whether my life were long or short.

5° *nac beag leat a luata* (TBC. 76)—that you think it all too soon.

6° *ní mór le Dia dóib an saibbreas do sgaipe com tuis is is maic leo é* (CMO. 343)—God does not begrudge it them to squander their wealth as fast as they like.

265 (a).—Corrective *ní n-eadh*—used, like the English “*nay*,” to tone down a too-strong assertion, or to add to a too weak one :—1° *is dóca, ní headh, ac is deimhin* (CMO. 183)—It is likely, nay, certain. 2° *ní headh, ac abalta ar a cur fiachain ar mioscais an áirseora glóire a tabairt do Dia* (CMO. 3)—Nay more, able to compel the devil's malice to glorify God. 3° *ní n-eadh, ac do fíora an camnt ó tosac* (CMO. 5)—Nay, more, the words were verified from the very start.



(b) **b'féirir**, perhaps :—1° The Fut. tense is not, as a rule, used after **b'féirir**, though it may be used before it :—**fiaprócaíò tuine, b'féirir, caò na éaoð gur cuir an slánuigíteoir an mallact ar an scrann** (CMO. 383)—Perhaps someone will ask why the Saviour cursed the tree. Once Can. O'L. has the Fut. after it :—**b'féirir go mairtíò sé do péacái òuit** (bñ. 665)—Maybe He will pardon you your sins. 2° **b'féirir** go **b'fiaprócaíò tuine éisín caò na éaoð gur labhair íosa cainnt nár tuigead** (CMO. 327)—Perhaps someone will ask why Jesus used words that were not understood. 3° **b'féirir** may be followed by—The Pres. Indic. actual or habitual ; the Past ; the Imperfect ; the Conditional. The Fut. may, of course, follow **má's féirir** ; and the vb. n. may follow both **má's féirir**, and **b'féirir**.

**266.—ní fuláir ; ní mór ; ní fuláir nó . . . .**

(a) **fuláir**=excess, hence **ní fuláir**=it is not excessive, i.e., it is necessary. **Ní mór** has often a similar meaning, but perhaps **ní fuláir** is stronger.

(b) 1° **ní fuláir**, expresses logical necessity, or duty or obligation (with implicit reference to some responsible agent) :—**ní fuláir gur mar sin atá**, it must be so (log. nec.) ; **ní fuláir é déanam**—it must be done (by somebody). 2° **ní fuláir do . . . .** expresses duty, obligation—with explicit reference to an agent :—**níoré fuláir do òul 7 aóðar do soláctar** (S. 7)—he had to go to procure some (leather). 3° **ní fuláir nó . . . .** expresses logical necessity only.—**ní fuláir nó tá tuirse ort**—you must be tired. “**nó**” is due to ellipsis :—**ní fuláir (gur tuine ana-láirir éu) nó . . . .**—You must (be a very strong man) or else you're tired.

(c) When **ní fuláir** is not itself dependent, either the direct or the dependent form follows **nó**. It is a question of whether the latter clause (in the full sentence, where nothing is suppressed) is conceived as being the second member of a disjunctive proposition, in construction with **ní fuláir** ; or as an independent conclusion, formed by the rejection of the statement introduced by **ní fuláir** :—Thus :—

A.—**ní fuláir**—(1) **gur tuine ana-láirir éu ; nó** (2) **go**



bruit tuirse ort. Here go in (2) is just as natural as gur in (1). Then, suppressing (1) we get—ní fuláir nó go bruit tuirse ort. Here, the only surprising thing is the illogical retention of nó.

B.—Ní fuláir (1) gur duime ana-láir tu ; nó (2)—independent conclusion, not in construction with ní fuláir—tá tuirse ort. Then, suppressing (1) we get—ní fuláir nó tá tuirse ort—which is more abnormal than the final form of A. Only the retention of nó saves it from being a monstrosity.

(d) When ní fuláir becomes nac fuláir, nár fuláir, the clause following nó will always be dependent. But the dependence may be either on nac fuláir, the two parts of the disjunction (in the full sentence) being in construction with it, and only through it, with the introductory verb. Thus :—

A.—Cao déarfao na daoine ac nár fuláir—(1) gur duime dána tar na beartaib é ; nó (2) nár gao do péin don eagla beic aise roimis an aimm. Here, if we suppress (1) the resultant sentence (S. chap. 19) necessarily shows the dep. form after nó, but (thus conceived) the dependence is due to nár fuláir, and not to déarfao. Or the dependence may be due to déarfao. Thus :—

B.—Cao déarfao na daoine ac—(1) nár fuláir (gur duime dána tar na beartaib é), nó (2) nár gao . . . . aimm. Here, nár following nó depends directly on déarfao.

267.—**is cuma nó**—equivalent to, like, as good as, as bad as, etc., is got, not by suppressing one member, but by a little transposition :—From sentences like 1° Ba cuma linn bás nó beata annsan (TBC. 152)—Life or death would be all the same to us, then—are easily derived sentences like the following :—2° is cuma nó muc duime gan seipt (Proverb)—A shiftless fellow is as useless as a swine. (<is cuma o. gan s. nó m). 3° is cuma nó bás an beata so—This life is not much better than death (<is cuma an b. so nó bás). Sometimes there is no transposition :—4° is cuma a gníomh nó an spleannc ! (TBC. 113)—His action is as quick as lightning ! Transposed :—is cuma nó an spleannc a gníomh.



5° *is cuma imeasg a namad é nó leon i measg caorac* (TBC. 51)—Among his foes he is ruthless as a lion. Transposed :—*is cuma nó leon é*. 6° *is cuma é nó coinneal adanta* (TBC. 51)—He is a lighted taper (Cuma nó tones down the metaphor. Transposed :—*is cuma nó c. a. é*). 7° *is cuma nó amceart lom-ceart* (Proverb)—Bare justice is not much better than injustice (<*is cuma l.c. nó ain-c.*). 8° *is cuma tu am' aigne-se nó aingeal ón oCigearna* (bh. 413)—To my mind you are just an Angel from the Lord. Transposed :—*is cuma nó a. . . . tu*.

Notice how the meaning of “ *is cuma nó* ” is coloured by the context.

268.—Very common is the following idiom :—

1° *ní brúigte go out i n-aois, is ní múinte go coiscriú*—One is not down and out till old, and he who has travelled is most polite. 2° *ní féasta go rósta, 's ní céasta go pósta* (Proverb)—The best feast is a roast. and marriage is the greatest torture ! 3° With *ac* instead of *go* :—*ní glóire go gréim ac neam, ní torann créan ac tóirneac* (Op. 54)—No glory like the Sun, save Heaven, No really loud report but thunder. 4° *ní h-aiteantas go h-aomtiogas* (Proverb)—“ If you want to know me, come and live with me.”

269 (a) *is minic gur* :—When any vb. other than *is* follows *is minic*, there is a direct rel. (for oblique, in temporal clause). But an *is* clause is introduced by *gur* (*nae, nár*) :—1° *is minic . . . . gurb ead is giorra bím out* (Im. 160)—It is oftentimes . . . . I am nearest to you. 2° *is minic a bios i gcuideactam 7 gurb fearr uim ná beinn* (Im.)—I have often been in company, and would rather I had not. 3° *is minic gur boct an gnó dúinn é 7 gur pollam* (Im.)—Oftentimes it is a vain and foolish proceeding.

(b) In dependent “ *is* ” sentences *ab* is *not* inserted after *gur* before a vowel :—1° When pred. is a vb. n. phrase :—*Oubart féin gur í coimead annso ba ceart* (n. 251)—I myself advised that she should be kept here. 2° When pred. is a prep. pron.—*mar ó ead gur ortá*



san a bí sí ag féachaint—As though she were looking at them. 3° When pred. is a prep. phrase :—O'admuigeadar gur ar niam a bí a búrdeacas acu (n.)—They admitted it was N. they had to thank for it (But see Ser. 52). 4° When pred. is an adverb :—Ceapas láitreac gur annso a bí sí (S. 78)—I concluded at once that she was here. 5° Sometimes when pred. is an ordinary noun :—Ná bí gá leogaint ort gur amaóán tu (S. 77)—Don't pretend that you're a fool.

**270.—The Substantive Verb.**—(a) The vb. *is*, being a logical copula, can never connect a substantive (n. or pron.) and a mode of being, because what is denoted by a substantive can never be identified with a mode of its being. The vb. *is* can be used only :—1° To connect two substantives (n. and n.; n. and adj.; pron. and n.; n. and pron.) :—Is amhróe capall—a horse is an animal ; Is maic bean deas-fir (TBC.)—a good man's wife is good ; Is tusa pé noear san—you are responsible for that ; An tu san?—Is that you? etc. 2° To connect two modes :—Is na seasam a bí sé—it's standing he was. Here, “na seasam” is one mode (pred.), and “a bí sé”=the state in which he was, is another mode (subj.).

(b)  *Tá* , on the other hand, being essentially a vb. denoting state or condition, can connect only a substantive and some mode of being :—1°  *Tá sé ar an úrlár* —it's on the floor (Local). 2°  *Tá sí i gcruaó-cás* —she's in difficulties (Extension of loc. usage). 3°  *Bí Liam ar aigne é réanam* —L. intended to do it (Mental condition—an extension of the local meaning).

(c) Where  *tá*  seems to connect two substantives, the second one is always modal :—1°  *Tá sé pas beag fuar* —it's a trifle cold. I.e., it's cold, to the extent of a little bit.  *pas beag*  is A. of Extent in Degree. 2°  *Tá sé iarractín as a meabair* —he's a bit crazy.  *Tá*  connects  *sé*  with the mode—as a meabair.  *iarractín*  qualifies the statement (A. of Extent in Degree). 3°  *Bí póil tamall 'na gréasair* —Paul was a cobbler for a time.  *Tamall*  is A. of Extent in Time.

(d) There is no pres. part. in I. The meaning is expressed by means of  *tá + ag + vb. n. (active)* ; or by



ro + a (G. pron.) + vb. n. (passive) :—1° *ṭáṭar aḡ ṵéanam ḡac don ṵicill*—One is doing one's best (active Auton.). 2° *ṭá ḡac don ṵiceall ṵá ṵéanam*—every effort is being made (pass.).

(e) With the past part. *ṭá* expresses :—1° The completion of an act :—*ṭá an leitr críochnuigte aḡam pé ṵeire*—At last I have the letter finished. 2° The resultant state :—*Ṫí na ṵóirse ṵúnta nuair a ḡroiseamair an halla*—the doors were closed (i.e., we found them in that state) when we reached the hall. N.B.—The Irish Trade-Mark “*ṵéanta i n-Éirinn*” is hardly defensible. If *is* is understood, it is wrong, because the reference should be to the *act* of manufacturing, and emphatically to the *place*. “*i n-Éirinn ro ṵeimead*” would do. Understanding *ṭá* things are even worse. “*ṭá so ṵéanta i n-Éirinn*” means either, “this article has been just made in I.” or—“it is in the state of having been made in I.” Neither of these conveys the right meaning.

(f) Immediate consecution of events is expressed by *ṭá + tréis (ṵ'éis) + vb. n.*—*aḡus tú tréis a ḡeallamaint ḡo ṵtíocrá*—Though you had just promised to come !

(g) With prep. *in* and G. pron. *ṭá* expresses :—1° Change—the contrast between what was and is ; what is and will be, etc.—*Ṫí sé 'na tráchnóna (ṵn. 27)*—evening had come ; *ní ṵia éire 'na n-Éirinn (ḡaic. 95)*—I. will no longer be I. 2° Actual Condition :—*Ṫí an ṵáisteac aḡ tuitim anuas 'na caisib*—the rain was coming down in torrents ; *Ṫíodar aḡ teact 'na ṵtámtib*—they were arriving in crowds ; *Siúo an fílróeact aḡ rit tré m' aigne 'na caisí ceoil*—Lo ! poetry runs through my mind in musical streams. *An fáro a beir péar aḡ pás ḡ ṵia 'na ṵia*—As long as grass grows and God is God !

(h) Further exx. of *ṭá + in + G. pronoun* :—1° *Ṫí Caligula in' impire sa Róim (CMO. 253)*—C. was Emperor in R. (Change). 2° *ḡo raib 'na namaro aḡ an impire (Ibid.)*—that he was an enemy of the E. (Actual condition). 3° *Ṫeado sé na cómarcta teinn ṵóib (CMO. 275)*—It would be a “sore sign” for them (Actual condition). 4° . . . . *na céann so-peicse ar an eaglais (CMO. 278)*—as visible Head of the Church (Change). 5° *uisge a beir na caise mór lároir (CMO. 302)*—water that shall



be a big strong stream (Actual condition). 6° *Tu gá ráð go bfuilir ro' Óia* (CMO. 334)—saying that you are God! (Actual condition). 7° . . . . *Ói sé fásta suas 'na tarrb* (TBC. 11)—he had grown up to be a bull (Change). 8° *Ói ainm Concuðair 'na taca nirt* (TBC. 88)—C.'s name was a powerful support (Actual condition—with a hint of change). 9° *Caspar go deo (=berð sé go deo) m-a asacán linn é* (TBC. 141)—it will be cast up to us as an eternal reproach (Actual condition). 10° *An croíde so tá 'na carradís le cruadhas* (CCU. 167)—this heart as hard as a rock (Actual condition).

These exx. show that in this construction *tá* does not always imply change.

(i) **mar a beað** :—1° *1 utreo . . . . go bfeácað an catar mar a beað coil* (CMO. 295)—so that the city looked as though it were a wood. 2° *Do connaic sé mar a beað éan* (S.)—he saw what looked like a bird. 3° *Tá mar a beað ciall daonna aise* (TBC. 11)—he has almost human intelligence. 4° *Óioð na daoine go léir mar a beoís as a meabair le buile átais* (CMO. 332)—The people were all out of their minds, as it were, with joyous abandon.

(j) Note the following uses with the prep. *ar* :—1° *Tá sé ar an bfeair is giorra do'n easbog* (BN.)—he is next to the Bishop. 2° *Ói oriocháir o'eom féin ar òime acu* (MAC. 8)—one of them was a brother of John himself. 3° *Ó'féoir go mbeað sé air as Cú Culainn an raðarc o' fulang* (TBC. 176)—Maybe it would take C.C. all his time to support the sight.

(k) *tá . . . . le* means :—1° am with, on the side of. 2° advise, counsel, discuss with. 3° in temporal clauses *tá . . . . le* denotes a pres. perf., *bí . . . . le* a pluperf. :—1° *An té ná fuil liom tá sé am' comuib* (CS.)—He that is not with Me is against Me. 2° *Ní haon maic beic leat*—there's no use talking to you. 3° *féac, táim as teact annso le trí blianaib* (CMO. 329)—Behold, I have been coming here for three years; *Óioðar ann le mí*—they had been there for a month.

**271.—Introductory *tá* :**—(a) *Tá daoine ann, 7 is mó acu eolas do cruinniú ná beata maic do cáiteam* (Im.)—



some people make it more their study to know than to live well. (b) *Ṭá ṽaome ann, 7 le neart uabair do ṽeampaíois trossaó ón mbiaó go bás* (Im.)—Some people, out of sheer pride, would fast from food till death. (c) *má ṭá surb é an ríṣ do ṽeir párdún a anma do'n braitse* (ES. 78)—Although the king pardons the culprit. (d) *má ṭá sur ṽean cur ṽ'á aniamsa ríá* (TBB. 89)—Even though some of its evil consequences affected her. (e) *Ṭá a lán ṽaome 7 is í a ṽtoil féin a bíonn uatá* (Im.)—many people seek their own way. (f) *Ṭá ṽaome, 7 ba maíṭ leo ṽia do sásam* (Ser. 147)—Some people would like to satisfy God.

### Other Verbs.

**272.**—(a) The verb usually precedes its subj.—*lá ṽa raib sé aṣ ṽeanam brós* (S. 7)—one day as he was making shoes. (b) There are several exceptions to this rule :—1. Considerations of clearness and harmony, etc., may interfere with the normal order (VS+complement of pred.). See 314, D. 2. The subj. N. is often projected (168). 3. A relative subj. precedes its verb. (c) Interrog. pronouns and adjectives are *not* exceptions :—*Cia ṽeim é sin?*—Who did that? *Cia* is *not* subj. to *ṽeim*, but pred. to *is* understood. The subj. of *ṽeim* is *a* (rel. understood). The subj. of *is* is—*an cé a ṽeim é*.

**273** —**Number** :—(a) The 3 sg. is often used with a pl. subj. :—*Cia aṽeir ṽaome is é mac an ṽume* (CMṼ. 277)—Who do people say the Son of Man is? (b) The pl. is used with a sg. subj. when it is a n. of multitude :—1. *Ṭánaṽar an ceatrar*—the four came. 2. *nár ṽeolsaó aṽ ṣac cránaé coisgríce* (KP. 19)—that the brood of every foreign sow did not suck. (c) When, however, the multitude is conceived as acting as a single whole, the sg. is preferable :—*ṽubairt an tseisear go raṣois ann go ponnmar*—the six women said they would go willingly. (d) The sg. or pl. is used with a dual subj.—*ṽeampaí an ṽá teabbar so mo ṣnó*—these two books will do me. (e) The analytic form of the vb., i.e., the 3 sg. along with *sib*, is used in 2 pl. pres. impft., fut. and condit., and pres. and past Subj.—1. *Ṭéigean sib a baile ṣac oíṽce*—



You go home every night. 2. *Cao na taoð ná filleadó sib ?*—Why didn't you return (habitually) ? 3. *Motparó sib í*—you'll praise her. 4. *Do cámpedó sib í*—you would have blamed her. 5. *So otéigíó sib slán a baidé*—Safe home. 6. *Dá mbuaidedó sib umam*—if I had met you. (f) A sg. vb. is used with a rel. subj. even when the latter is pl. in meaning :—*Tós leat pé leabair atá uait*—take whatever books you want. (g) When the rel. is A. or D. (temporal, modal, local or instrumental) a pl. vb. may of course be used with a pl. subj.—1. *Na neite a demro siad*—the things they do. 2. *Nuair a demro siad a leitéirí*—when they do such things. 3. *Ba dóic leat ar an gcuma 'n-a bfuilro*—you would think, by the way they are. . . . 4. *Cia'cu toir no tiar atáir*—whether they are in the East or West. 5. *pé'cu le scin nó le claidéam a marbuidéadar é*—whether it was with knife or sword they slew him. (g) The 3 sg. is the only form in use, in modern I., in the ordinary pass. or auton. paradigms. The extant *forms* of the vb. *is* (in all moods and tenses) are 3 sg.

**274.—Tense.**—(a) The pres. habitual is used with *má* in a fut. sense. The fut. may be used if there is distinct reference to one particular occasion. *Motparó sib í má beró an moladó tuille aicí*—You'll praise her of (on that particular occasion) she shall have deserved it. (b) The simple past tense has often the force of a pluperf. :—*Bí catáoir súgáin aige do dem sé péim ró péim* (S. 6)—he had a "soogawn" chair which he had made for himself. (c) In temporal clauses with *le*, the pres. is a pres. perf. and the past a pluperf. in force :—*So raib sean-aicne ag an annspríó ortá le fada ó'aimsir* (CMO. 95)—That the evil Spirit had known them for ever so long. (See 270, k).

**275.—Mood :**—(a) The Imperative is sometimes interjectional and sometimes conjunctive in value :—*Abair é*—True ! You may say so. Hear, hear ! *féac*—Look here (even when said to several). *Cuir i gcás go*—Even if. *Abair péim go*—Even though. (b) The imper. signifies the act or event which one commands to take



place. It is changed into the vb. n. when it becomes dependent :—1° *Ṭair isteach*—Come in. But—*Abair leis teach isteach*—Tell him to come in. 2° In such a case prohibitions are expressed by *gan* before the vb. n. or vb. n. phrase—*Ná oim guro*—Thou shalt not steal. But—*Ṭá oruighe dúinn gan guro a déanam*—We are forbidden to steal.

**276 (a)**—The Indicative, being the mood of fact, expresses pres. or past facts; or future ones, not conceived as mere contingencies. The sentence may of course be negative. Or the fact may be referred to conditionally, but even then it is assumed to be a fact, past, present or future :—1. *‘Do tánachtas gam’ iarrad mar baimcéile* (TBC. 2)—Messengers came to seek me in marriage. 2. *Má gheibean sí lom ar Concubair, beiró tainte bó go tuig ó Cúige Uladh agam* (TBC. 6)—If she gets a chance at C . . . . I shall have . . . . (b) In the apodosis of a condit. sentence the Indic. is sometimes used for the Condit., to express the certainty of the result :—*Muna mbeadó tusa, do bíos maró acu*—Had it not been for you, they would certainly have killed me.

**277.**—The Conditional partakes of the nature of a mood as well as a tense. (a) As a tense it is a secondary fut., *i.e.*, it represents the simple fut. when dependent on, or brought into connection with the past. *‘Dubairt sé moé go dtiocfaó sé mion*—he said yesterday he would come to-day (This represents the direct statement—*tiocfaó imbáiread*). The simple fut. is used after the pres. or the fut.—*Deir sé (‘dearfad sé) go dtiocfaó sé*—He says (will say) that he’ll come. *Sé ruo a ceapas ná go raḡad sí i laige*—I really thought she would faint. (This represents the direct thought—*raḡad sí i laige*). (b) In rhetorical questions like the following, where it is virtually equivalent to a past indic., the “tense” value is uppermost :—1. *Cao a cífinn ós mo cómar amac ac an gallán !* (S.)—What should I see in front of me but a pillar-stone ! (More vivid than *do connac*). 2. *Cé cífrois ag teacht cun an dorais ac Séadna* (S. 89)—(A vivid way of saying *do connacadar* . .



Or, equally vivid :—*b'é tóime connacáodar . . . . ac S !*). (c) The *condit.* occurs sometimes where English has the past tense.—*Ac ní déanfaínn ruo ort*—But I didn't do as you wished. Much stronger than *níor déimeas*, which simply express the fact ; whereas the *condit.* embraces the whole mental atmosphere that engendered the fact. Here the modal, not the tense value is uppermost. It is, in fact, a conditional sentence, with the *protasis* suppressed. The *condit.* may often have any one of three tense values :—1. *ní féadfaínn a innsint túit*—I couldn't tell you (now, or habitually). 2. I couldn't have told you. 3. I couldn't tell you (in the fut.). The past *Subj.* with *óá* has also these three tense values.

**278.—The Subjunctive is the mood of Idea.** Hence it is used :—(a) As an *Optative* (an idea to be realised) :—1. *Go b'fóiriré óia ort*—God help you. (2) *Go mbuanuigiré óia tú*—Long life ! 3. *Surab amlairé túit*—The same to you. 4. *Nár cúitigítear do shaoctar leat*—May your efforts not be rewarded. 5. *Nár feiciré mé an doilgeas céadna i súilib don mná eile arís coróce* (Smó. 91)—May I never again see the same grief in the eyes of any woman. (b) To express indefinite time :—The action or event is viewed as a pure contingency :—1. *Ná labair cun go labarctar leat*—Don't speak until you're spoken to (if that happens). 2. *Sar a nóruróeado níos sía ó aimsir an Coláiste* (MSp. 108)—Before I farther depart from my College days. (The departure is still vague). (c) As a final *Subj.* (to denote the idea aimed at) :—1. *Go gcuiriré sé bara a méire i n-uisce* (CMO. 334)—That he may dip the tip of his finger in water. 2. *Siab na n-eic úimn, a laoiḡ, go leanam iad* (TBC. 66)—Yoke us the horses, L., that we may follow them. (d) With *óá* (of an unreal condition) :—1. *Óá noemti i oṡuire ḡ i síoón na mírbúiltí a deimeadó ionaib-se is fao ó a beadó aicriḡe véanta acu* (CMO. 315)—If in T. and S. had been wrought the miracles that have been wrought in you, they would long since have done penance. 2. *Óá mba fear omnac imeḡlac a beadó pósta ḡsam ní oirpimis óá céile* (TBC 3)—Had I married a fearsome timorous husband, we



should not have suited each other. (e) With *muna* (to express uncertainty or indefiniteness) :—1. *Muna n-iciró sib feoil míc an Duine, ⁊ muna n-ólairó sib a cúro fóla, ní beiró beata aḡaib ionaib* (CMO. 262)—Unless ye eat the flesh of the Son of Man, and drink His Blood, ye shall not have life in you. 2. *Muna n-éistiró sé leat, tabair leat duine nó beirt eile* (CMO. 292)—If he listens not, bring with you one or two others.

### Syntax of Conditional Sentences.

279.—In actual pres. suppositions with *má*, the apodosis may be :—1. Pres. indic. 2. Impft. 3. Past. 4. Fut. 5. Condit. 6. Imper. 7. Optative Subj.—*Má tá sé ann* (Protasis) :—1. *Tá an lá aḡainn*, we win. 2. *Óiró sé ann anuiriró leis*—he used to be there last year too. 3. *Ói dearmad orm*—I was wrong. 4. *Beiró an sḡeal go maic*—things will be all right. 5. *Beiró sé conntabrtac é déanam*—it would be dangerous to do it. 6. *Labrair sé*—let him speak. 7. *Nára' maic aḡat-sa*—no thanks to you !

280.—In past supposition with *má*, the apodosis may be the same :—*Má bí sé ann* (Protasis) :—1. *Tá buairte aḡainn air*—we've beaten him. 2. *Óiró sé ann anuiriró, leis*. 3. *D'airis sé an sḡeal go léir*—he heard the whole story. 4. *Tabrparó sé fiaonaise*—he'll give evidence. 5. *D'fearra dúinn glaoðac isteach air*—we'd better call him in. 6. *Óiró sé m' fínné aḡainn anois*—let's have him as a witness now. 7. *Conac san air !*—more power to him !

281.—In hab. pres. suppositions, the apodosis may take similar forms :—*Má téigean sé a baile ḡac oróce* (Protasis) :—1. *Tá dearmad ormsa*—I'm mistaken. 2. *Ní bíonn puinn fáilte romis*—he's not very welcome. 3. *Óiró dearmad ar táog*—T. was mistaken. 4. *B'olc uaitse ḡan é innsint dúinn*—you might have told us. 5. *Beiró eactra i ticiḡ airite anocht*—there will be tales in a certain house to-night. 6. *Beiró sé cóim maic aḡainn éirḡe as*—we might as well give it up. 7. *Abair leis*



ceadt istead anois—tell him to come in now. 8. Go mairrò sé céad—may he live a century !

282.—In habitual pres. (=fut.) and fut. suppositions with *má* :—*Má buaileann sé (buaileprò sé) umar* :—1. *Ní gearánta duit*—you needn't complain. 3. *Bí dearmad ar daine éigin*—someone was wrong. 4. *Féadfaid sib é socrú*—you'll be able to settle it. 5. *Beadh sé còmh maith agat labhairt leis*—you might as well speak to him. 6. *Abair leis ceadt i mbáiread*—tell him to come to-morrow. 7. *Go maistrò Dia dó é*—God forgive him !

283.—With *má* and the Imperfect :—*Má bíodh sé ann gac oróce* :—1. *Ní tuigim-se é*—I don't understand it. 2. *Dó cíteá-sa é*—you were wont to see him. 3. *Bí sé ann an oróce úd*—he was there that night. 4. *Cia déarfaid ná go mberò sé ann anocht ?*—Who'll say he won't be there to-night ? 5. *Dó beadh sé ann anocht*—he'd be here to-night. 6. *Ná h-mnis d'aoimne é*—don't tell anybody. 7. *Go bpróirò Dia air*—God help him !

284.—Conditional supposition with *má* :—*Má beadh sé oireamnac duit*—if it would suit you (as I'm sure it would) :—1. *Tá sé còmh maith agat é breith leat*—you may as well take it with you. 2. *Bí an ceart agam ó cianaid*—I was right a while ago. 3. *Féadfaid é tabairt tar n-ais cúgam*—you can bring it back to me. 4. *Beadh sé còmh maith agat é triail*—you might as well try it. 5. *Bíodh sé agat*—you may have it. 6. *Go noéanaró sé maiteas duit*—may it do you good.

285.—Suppositions with *dá* :—The apodosis may be :—(a) The Conditional. (b) Sometimes suppressed, or virtually contained in the context. (c) The Past indic. for vividness :—

(a) *Dá noimeadh an uile daine agaid cion fir sa comrac, beadh an lá againn*—If every man of you would do a man's part in the combat we should be victorious (Fut. reference).

(b) 1° *D'fhás móiricos a raib aise ag aristéas dá*



mb'é fém a gheobhó bás ar tóuis (Lúc. 27)—M. left all his property to A. in case he predeceased him. The apodosis is merely hinted at. Expressed, it would be—  
 1° tótreo, dá mb'é fém . . . . go bfuigeadó A. a raib aise.  
 2° 'D'airig sé an gcallamaint a tug íosa do'n duine uasal, dá sgaraó sé leis an saibbreas saogalta (CMO. 364)—He heard the promise Jesus had given the young man if he would discard his worldly goods. Here the implied apodosis is :—(Do gcall sé dó dá . . . .) go mbeaó saibbreas ar neam aise (CMO. 363)—he would have riches in heaven. 3° Dá mb'é Seán Ceatac fém é (S.)—Even S.C.

(c) 1° Dá nglacaó sé iad, bí buairte as an áirseoir air (CMO. 93)—Had He accepted them, it meant triumph for the devil. 2. Dá mbeinn na cás bios cóim marb le h-art (S.)—Had I been in his place I should surely have been as dead as a door-nail.

**286.—Auxiliary oem :**—Used to express insistence (in command or request) ; premeditation, deliberateness, a promise, etc. :—1° Déanfao-sa é tógáilt suas (CMO. 261)—I will raise him up (Promise). 2° Déanfao siad cur acu do marbú (CMO. 324)—They will actually kill some of them (Premeditation). 3° Oemeadar an teampal do coisreacan (CMO. 332)—They proceeded to consecrate the Temple (Deliberate action). 4° Ad' iarrair go ndéanfaó sé ceart a cur i bfeirm ví (CMO. 358)—Seeking that he would see that her rights were secured. (Premeditation). 5° Go ndearnaó é fém do nise i bfuil ríog (rf. Bk. I, 322)—till he should contrive to wash in a king's blood (Deliberateness). 6. Oemrò é cómlíonaó (bh. 256)—See that ye fulfil it (Insistence in command). 7° Oem-se ár gcatana do troro (bh. 823)—Go and fight our battles (Insistence in request).

**287.—Neutral oem :**—Used in a “quasi-passive” sense, meaning—“becomes, changes into” :—1° An cloc . . . . do rinne sliaó mór ví (TBB. 3)—The stone became a huge mountain. 2° Déanfaó f'airisíneac ve (CMO. 360)—He will become a Pharisee. 3° Déanfaó



DRÓ LIC' OÍGRE D'ÁR SCURÓ FOLA (TBC. 60)—Our blood will change into a mass of ice. 4° BÍ SÍ AS CALCAÓ 7 AS CRUAÓCÁINT SO DÚÍ SUR DEM CLOC DÍ (LUC. 7)—She stiffened and hardened, and finally changed into stone. 5° DO DEM LICÍNÍ SLINNE DE'N AIRGEAD (S.)—The money was transformed into little flat pebbles.

**288.—The Verb DEIRIM :—**(a) This vb. and its vb. n. RÁÓ are often used where English has "think" :—1° DÉARFADÓ DUINE—One would think. 2° NÍ DEIRIM NÁ SO BPUIL AN CEART AGAT—I'm inclined to think you're right. 3° BÍ IONGNA MO ÉORÓE ORM, A RÁÓ SO NOÉANFADÓ SÉ É—I was amazed to think he would do it. (b) The part. ABARÇA is stronger than RÁÓTE :—TÁ ABARÇA AGAM SO DTAÓARFADÓ AMAÉ SÍB AS AN NGUAIS SEO ATÁ ORAIB SAN ÉIGIPT (BH.)—I have said (and I mean to stand by it) that I will rescue you from this peril you are in, in Egypt.

**289.—TÉIGIM.**—The simple form CUARÓ is often used for DEAGARÓ, DEACARÓ, especially when the meaning is metaphorical .—1° DÁ MÉRO A BÍ AN CION AR DÚÍS, SUR CUARÓ ANA-BREIS AIR LE CÚPLA LÁ (TBC. 162)—Great though the affection was at first, that it had increased considerably the last couple of days. 2° DUBAIRT SÍ LIOM SUR CUAS I SCOTUIGTEACHT SO SEOIS Ó ANUIRÍÓ—She told me I had grown very stout since last year.

DEAGARÓ (DEACARÓ) is also used :—AGUS FÉAC SO NOEAGARÓ SÉ DE BEAN D'FAGÁIL A BEADÓ DÍLIS DÓ (PSA. 11)—And yet he failed to secure a wife who would be faithful

**290.—Impersonal Verbs :—**1° BÍ EAGAL AIR SO SCOILFEADÓ AIR—He was afraid he would split. 2° IS É IS DÓICÍGE SO N-ÉIREOCARÓ EATORÇA—It's very likely they'll disagree. 3° BA DÓBÁIR SO SCAILLFEADÓ AR A MISNEAC—Her courage almost failed her. 4° DO CUARÓ DÁ SCURÓ PÍONA—Their wine failed. 5° RAĞARÓ DÍOT É DÉANAM—You'll fail to do it. 6° DO BRIS AR AN BFORÓNE AGAM—My patience became exhausted. 7° DO MAOLUIĞ AR AN NOÍOSRAS, 7 DO LAĞUIĞ AR AN NOÍLSE (BH. 261)—The zeal waned, and the loyalty weakened. 8° TEIP ORÇA AN



ceist do réirtead (bn. 299)—They failed to solve the question. Cf.—189.

**291 —The Autonomous Forms :—**(a) It has been said that *tátar buailte* is the pass. of the act. auton., *buailtear*. This is wrong. *Tátar buailte* is an actual pres., whereas *buailtear* is an habitual pres. The true pass. of *buailtear* is *bítear buailte*—someone is (habitually) struck ; and even this represents the act as just completed, or else refers to the subsequent state. There is no pass.-auton. form for “someone is being struck (habitually).” The essence of the auton. is that the subject is suppressed. Hence no word defining the sex or the number of the subject is permissible. *Bítear dá bualaó* (b—, mb—) in the sense of “someone (man, woman, or several people) is being struck” is impossible as a pass.-auton. It says too much about the subject. *Bítear dá bualaó* is an act. auton. form, and can mean only—“someone is habitually striking him (it).” *Bítear buailte* is pass.-auton., but with the restrictions noted above.

(b) The following pass.-auton. forms are found. The corresponding active-auton. forms are given in the first column :—

#### Active-Autonomous

#### Passive-Autonomous

1° Pres. indic. actual :—

*Tátar ag bualaó*—someone is now striking.

*Tátar buailte*—someone is now just—struck.

(Or *tátar buailte* may refer to the subsequent state. There is no pass.-auton. for “someone is now being struck.” That requires the purely pass. form “*tá dume éigim dá bualaó*.” See (a) above).

2° Present Habitual :—

(a) *Buailtear*—someone strikes.

(a) *Bítear buailte*.  
(But see (a) above).

(b) *Bítear ag bualaó*—someone is striking (contemporaneous).

(b) Wanting. See 292.



## 3° Past Indicative :—

- |   |                                  |
|---|----------------------------------|
| (a) Ɔo buailɛɔ—someone struck.                | (a) Ɔiteas buailte. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Ɔo Ɔiteas as bualaɔ—someone was striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.            |

## 4° Future Indicative :—

- |   |                                 |
|---|---------------------------------|
| (a) buailɛar—someone will strike.             | (a) Ɔeɛar buailte. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Ɔeɛar as bualaɔ—someone will be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.           |

## 5° Conditional :—

- |  |                                |
|--|--------------------------------|
| (a) Ɔo buailɛi—someone would strike.             | (a) Ɔeɛi buailte. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Ɔo Ɔeɛi as bualaɔ—someone would be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.          |

## 6° Imperfect Indicative :—

- |  |                                |
|--|--------------------------------|
| (a) Ɔo buailɛi—someone used to strike.             | (a) Ɔiɛi buailte. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Ɔo Ɔiɛi as bualaɔ—someone used to be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.          |

## 7° Imperative :—

- |   |                                  |
|---|----------------------------------|
| (a) buailtear—let someone strike.             | (a) Ɔitear buailte. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Ɔitear as bualaɔ—let someone be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.            |

## 8° Present Subjunctive :—

- |  |                                     |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| (a) ʒo mbuailtear—may someone strike.            | (a) ʒo raɔɛar buailte. See (a) 291. |
| (b) ʒo raɔɛar as bualaɔ—may someone be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.               |

## 9° Past Subjunctive :—

- |  |                                    |
|--|------------------------------------|
| (a) Ɔa mbuailɛi—if someone were to strike.       | (a) Ɔa mbeɛi buailte. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Ɔa mbeɛi as bualaɔ—if someone were striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.              |



**292.—1°** The remarks on *buaite* in **291** (a) apply to all the pass.-auton. forms given above. The (b) forms are wanting in all the moods and tenses in the pass.-auton. paradigm. In the fut., e.g., there is no such form for “someone will be being struck.” *Beirò uime éigim* *óá buatao* is a non-auton. pass. *Beirar as buatao uime éigim*, is active-autonomous.

**2°** (a) It is, therefore, wrong to say (as has been said) that the Auton. has a complete Pass. of its own. (b) It is wrong to say that the disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are used with it. In “*buaitear é*” *é* is not disjunctive. It is A. governed by *buaitear*, just as in “*buaite é*” it is A. governed by *buaite*. (c) The forms *buaitear*, *buaiteao*, *buaitear*, *buaitei*, *buaitei*, may be either pass. or auton. This is clear not only from old and mid. I., but also from mod. I. Keating often uses such forms in a pass. sense :—1. *marbtao leis é* (ff. Bk. I, 42)—he was slain by him. 2. *Oilmuigtear long leis* (*Ibid.* 52)—a ship is equipped by him. K., in fact was inordinately fond of the passive. This, however, cannot disprove the fact that there is an Autonomous in mod. I. The *ta-* forms are conclusive proof of this ; and those of other intrans. verbs (e.g., *siubaltar*), though they might be explained as impersonal passives, are certainly autonomous in the minds of many speakers and writers of Irish.

**3°** The initial consonant of auton. (or pass.) forms often resists aspiration :—(a) *ní dóca go raibadar i bpaó sa cáthair sar ar fiafruigeao díob cé'rb' as iao* (CMO. 57)—Probably they hadn't been long in the city before they were asked where they were from. (b) *Óo tánačas 'gam' iarraró mar baim-céile* (TBC. 2)—Messengers came to ask me in marriage.

### **293.—Special uses of the Participle :—**

A.—The Participle of Necessity :—In O.I. this was distinct from the ordinary participle. In mod. I. they have become confused :—1° *ní gearánta duit*—You need not complain. 2° *ní beirte duit ann*—You should not be there. 3° *ní n-ormsa is cógta san*—I am not to be blamed for that. 4° *as so an clann is clann óáiririb* ;



Riú so is sínte súž do čiož (HΔic. p. 91)—Here are the genuine children—to them you should offer the milk of your breasts. 5° Czerote žniom roim čaimnt is čairt (*Ibid.*)—Deeds are to be credited, in preference to words and paper.

B.—Forms with prefix ion, -in :—(a) 1° Δn riΔžΔil buō mleantΔ (OŮ. 56)—The rule that should be followed. 2° mōrān do neitib mscrībčΔ uirtī (*Ibid.* 94)—Many things that ought to be written about her. 3° Δs so is iontuigte (řř. Bk. I, 58)—From this it is to be inferred. 4° is inmeastΔ (*Ibid.* 64)—It is probable. (b) Those like mpeaōma—fit for action :—1° ionairm (*Ibid.*)—able to bear arms. As airm looked like a G. (which of course it is not) such forms may have given rise to mpeaōma, etc.

2° nī ionrāirō (*Ibid.* 146.)—It is not to be said. 3° ē řém do čeangal re beit ionaistīr (TBC. 287)—To gird himself to be fit for a journey.



## CHAPTER VI.

### SYNTAX OF ADVERBS.

294.—Note the following :—

1. *An saogal atá suas muid*—the times that are in existence now.

2. *Óiodar annsú anuas ar a cúir tailim (bh.)*—There they were—planted on his land !

3. *Suas (better tuas)*—South (Art Bennett) :—*Is árd an céim do bheir Seagán Ó Dálaigh do ollamh 's do bárd na tíre suas (CCU. 160)*—High degree giveth S. O'D. to the learned bards of the South.

4. *Tair aníos*—come up (from below) ; *tair anuas*—come down (from above) ; *tair (téanam) suas*—come up (when the speaker is coming up also).

5. *Raigad-sa anonn annso* (with emphasis on *anonn*)—I'll go aside here.

6. *íoir* still survives in Rathlin I. in the meaning of “at all.”—*An oíis tú anocht, nó an oíis tú amárach ? nó muna oíis tú íoir, is truaḡ atá mé (CCU. 102)*—Will you come to-night, or will you come to-morrow ? Or, if you come not at all, my state is to be pitied !

7. *I otreo go mbead neart na namad íoighe amuic is amac (bh. 254)*—So that the enemies' strength should be utterly exhausted.

8. *Bí an muintir ós as éirge suas, 7 an muintir a bí suas as out i n-aois (bh. 256)*—The young people were growing up, and those who were grown up were getting old.

9. *In coigtróis is lá muid*—this day fortnight (in the past), *is=sus an—lit.*, a fortnight until to-day ; (*sus=* 50+initial *s-* of article).

10. *In cá=where ?* we seem to have the interrog. pron. *cá+an* (the prep. (?) found in *aníar*, etc.) suffixed.



The natural meaning is, therefore, "whence," but the word is used also meaning "where" and "whither."

11. When the idea of motion towards is involved, even though the verb is not one of motion, *isteach* and *amach* are used :—*Cóm luath is bíodair isteach inné do stad an gaoth* (CMO. 258)—As soon as they had entered the boat the wind fell.

295.—In—*pé sgéat é*, at any rate, etc., *pé* is supposed to stand for *gíó bé*, where *bé* is pres. subj. of *ta*. This is possible in—*pé rume a béró ann*—whoever will be there—*lit.* though there be a person who will be there. But in—*pé sgéat é, pé hé féin*, etc., where clearly we have to deal with the copula, it seems better to make *pé (bé)=b'é*, i.e., the pres. Subj. of the copula+*é*. Thus :—*pé sgéat é=gíó b'é an sgéat (a is) é*—though the state of affairs be this. There seems to have been confusion between the copula and the substantive vb. here. Note that *é* in *pé* does not change for gender or number. This is due to *pé<bé=pres. Subj. of ta*.

296.—Expression of the Date :—Supposing to-day is Wed., July 14th, note the following way of referring to fut. and past dates :—

1° Fut.—

The 21st July will be :—*seachtmáin ó inniu*.

„ 22nd „ „	:— „ „	<i>imbáiread.</i>
„ 23rd „ „	:— „ „	<i>ón domhe seo cúgamn.</i>
„ 16th „ „	:— <i>umanoirtear</i> ( <i>arbhú, arú, achrú</i> <i>imbáiread</i> ).	
„ 17th „ „	:— <i>Óia Sathairn</i>	<i>seo cúgamn.</i>
„ 28th „ „	:— <i>Coiscéirís</i>	<i>ó inniu.</i>
„ 29th „ „	:— „ „	<i>imbáiread.</i>
„ 30th „ „	:— „ „	<i>ón domhe seo cúgamn.</i>
„ 24th „ „	:— <i>seachtmáin</i>	<i>ón Satharn so cúg-</i> <i>amn.</i>
„ 4th Aug. „ „	:— <i>trí seachtmáine</i>	<i>ó inniu.</i>
„ 11th „ „	:— <i>ceitre</i>	„ „ „
„ 5th „ „	:— <i>trí</i>	„ „ <i>imbáiread.</i>
„ 6th „ „	:— „ „	<i>ón domhe seo</i> <i>cúgamn.</i>



## 2° Past.—

- 7th July :—Seachtmáin is lá iníu.  
 6th „ :— „ „ „ iníé.  
 8th „ :—Dáardaoin seo saib taramn.  
 5th „ :—Dia luain „ „ „  
 30th June —Coiscéir is lá iníu.  
 23rd „ :—Trí seachtmáine is lá iníu.  
 16th „ :—Ceitre „ „ „ „  
 29th „ :—Coiscéir is lá iníé.  
 22nd :—Trí seachtmáine is lá iníé  
 15th „ :—Ceitre „ „ „ „  
 1st July :—Seachtmáin is an dáardaoin seo saib taramn.  
 24th June :—Coiscéir is an dáardaoin seo saib taramn.  
 17th „ :—Trí seachtmáine is an dáardaoin seo saib taramn.  
 10th „ :—Ceitre seachtmáine is an dáardaoin seo saib taramn.

297.—All these expressions (296) are adverbial. Seachtmáin (coiscéir is (-deas), etc.) ó—are used only with iníu and imbáireac—not with iníé, arbú iníé, or umanoirtear. Instead of these, reference must be made to the day of the week. So, seachtmáin (coiscéir is, etc.) is lá—are to be used only with iníu, iníé—not with arbú iníé, nor imbáireac, nor umanoirtear. Instead of these, reference must be made to the day of the week.

298.—Whenever the day in question can be designated (adverbially) by iníu, iníé, imbáireac, átrú iníé, umanoirtear (átrú imbáireac) these are the forms to be used—not Dia luain, etc.



## CHAPTER VII.

### SYNTAX OF CONJUNCTIONS.

**299 (a)**—The conj. **agus** is connected with the adj. **ogus**, in **rogus**, near. Hence it is used to connect two events which happen simultaneously, or close to each other in time :—1° **Is léir ón scainnt go raib aigne na maigóine 7 í ag ráð na bpoat** (CMO. 30)—It is clear from what she said that the Virgin's mind as she said the words. . . . 2° **Ói mórán áobair maectnam ag an slánuigteoir 7 é 'na surde annsúo** (CMO. 138)—The Saviour had much food for reflection as He sat there. 3° **Ói an t-arán briste 7 an t-iasc briste ag méadóu i lámh an tigearna 7 é sá otabairt do sna deisgiobuil** (CMO. 256)—The pieces of bread and of fish were multiplying in the Lord's hand, as He gave them to the disciples.

(b) In neg. sentences **agus** is conjunctive, **ná** disjunctive :—**Agus** :—1° **Ní raib puinn saogaltais ag ióachim 7 anna** (CMO. 35)—J. and A. (taken together as one domestic establishment) had not much worldly wealth. 2° **Ní raib cailín ar slíocht ádam 7 éba oob' uaisle os cómar Dé ná í** (CMO. 280-1)—There was no maid of the seed of A. and E. higher in God's sight than She. 3° **An té . . . ná déanfað meas cruinn roim ré ar an scostas, 7 ar an áobair 7 ar an eolus nárb' fuláir a beir ag an luét oibre 7 ag na saoir** (CMO. 328)—He who would not calculate carefully beforehand the cost and the material and the knowledge that the masons and other workmen must have. . . . (All these items considered, not separately, but together). 4° **Ní n-eol dom don liaig is mó eolus 7 tuisgint ná é**—I know of no leech who combines more knowledge and intelligence than he does.

**ná** :—1° **Níl a curo ná a clú aige siro**—That fellow



has neither riches nor reputation. 2° níl so ná súo acu—They have neither the one thing nor the other. 3° ní toubart go n'óéanpáinn é ná ná 'óéanpáinn—I neither said I would do it nor that I wouldn't.

(c) ní followed by ná gives a resultant affirmative :—1° ní 'deirim ná go bfuil an ceart agat—I'm inclined to think you're right. 2° ní 'óearpáinn ná sur 'deag-óuine é—I'm disposed to think he's a good fellow. 3° ní baogal ná sur tuis na Rómánaig luac an tabarctais sin (bn. 833)—One may be sure that the Romans realised the value of this gift.

(d) ní . . . . ná ní.—This combination has a cumulative negative force :—1° ní raib eagla 'óé air, ná ní raib beann ar 'óuine aige (CMO. 358)—He hadn't the fear of God, no, nor care for man, either. 2° ní leogair síad ortá go bpeicir síad é, ná ní leigean seisean air go bpeiceann sé iad (TBC. 149)—They don't pretend that they see him. No more does he pretend that he sees them.

(e) ná ná . . . . nó ná.—In a negative clause, when the negative affects nó, the latter becomes ná :—Má 'deintear toil an 'tígearna is cuma an 'óomán cad eile a 'deintear ná ná 'deintear. Mara n'óeintear toil an t. cad é an tairbe don n'ó eile a 'deintear nú ná 'deintear? (CMO. 319)—If one does the Lord's will, it matters not one whit what else one does or does not. If one does not do the Lord's will, what's the use of anything else he does or does not?

(f) The use of má with the Condit. should be noted :—Cá bfuil an cura a 'tabrpaó beann leis i gcomnib a toile? Má 'tabrpaó ní fíor-cura é (TBC. 134)—Where is the knight who would bring a wife with him against her will? If he did, he's no true knight!

This assumes the supposition to be true.

(g) nó has often the meaning—"or else" :—Ní maic í 'do éiall, nó níor múmis a gceact go cruinn 'óó' 'ceactairib (TBC. 17)—You haven't much sense, or else you didn't teach your messengers their lesson well!

(h) mara=munab :—1° mara fíú, ám, fíllfíó bur síotcáin oraib fém (CMO. 246)—If, however, it is not worthy (of it) your peace will return to yourselves,



2° *MARA* *maic* *lib* *mise* *oo creideamaint* (CMO. 334)—If ye do not wish to believe Me. 3° In U.I. *act mar* often=*muna* :—*is duine boct suarac me act mar bpaigir me tu mar spre* (CCU. 100)—I'm a poor wretched fellow, if I do not get you to wed.

(i) *Da mba*=Even.—1° *Da mb'lad na deisgiobuil pem lad bi a dtuisimint maol* (CMO. 281)—Even the disciples' intelligence was clouded. 2° *Da mba as tract ar dilneact pem e, is breacta go mor i na Deirre* (TBC. 5)—Talking even of beauty she's fairer far than D. (Supply, as apodosis, something like—*oo caicrimis so domail*).

(j) *Da* introduces an unreal supposition, so that words like *punn*, which can be used only in a neg. or virtually neg. clause, may occur with it :—*Da mbead se ann, 7 eolas na h-aithe m-a raib se as punn daoine, ni baogal na go bpaad na rigte pasana ca san an t-eolas* (Mac. 10)—If it (a supposed hidden treasure) had existed, and many people knew where it was, those pagan kings would certainly have had the knowledge of its whereabouts.

(k) The N. after *na*, than :—As *na* contains a petrified form of the rel. 3 sg. of *ta* (88c), the n. pron., phrase or clause following it may often be parsed as subj. N. to that verb :—1° *Taoi-se i bpaod nios fearr na mise*—You are much better than I (am). 2° *Ta si nios veise na mar is doic leatsa*—She's prettier than you think. But there is sometimes an alternative interpretation :—*Nil doinne is fearr a tamis as na mise*—No one escaped better than I.—Here, we may supply after *na*—*mar a tamis* (*mise*) *as*. *Mise* being subj. N. to *tamis*, and the whole clause *mar . . . as*, subj. N. after *na*.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### SYNTAX OF PREPOSITIONS.

**300.—Partitive *de* :—**Occurs chiefly :—

1° After an adj. or n. of magnitude, multitude, intensity, description, etc. :—(a) *Sluaḡ de ḡaoimib̄ boḡta na caṡraḡ* (CMḌ. 57)—Many of the poor of the city. (b) *Ón ḡceann ṡeas de'n loḡ* (CMḌ. 254)—from the South end of the lake. (c) *ḡaḡ beaḡ de ḡionós uirt̄i* (CMḌ. 305)—that it is sufficient punishment for her. (d) *Ḍon léas de ḡolus na ḡirmne*—a single ray of the light of truth.

2° After proleptic *sé*, *so*, *san*, *a* ; also after analeptic *san* :—

(a) *Ḍn mbeaḡ sé de ḡisneac aḡ íosa Ḍn ṡsabbóro do ḡárú* (CMḌ. 336)—would Jesus have the courage to violate the Sabbath. (b) Sometimes proleptic *sé* is omitted :—*ḡí raib̄ de ḡánaḡt Ḍnn a ḡúile Ḍmám ḡ'íompáil suas cun na ḡḡlaṡas* (CMḌ. 359)—He was not bold enough to raise even his eyes to Heaven. (c) *ḡá cuirimís san de ḡasla Ḍr Ḍr ḡḡlóire ḡo ḡteicḡimís ón ḡcrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross. (d) *ḡa ḡaite Ḍn ḡḡeal a beite de ṡiubaiṡte uirt̄i é ḡá ḡosaḡ* (S. 112)—It would have been a good thing if she were so unfortunate as to have him marry her. (e) *ís beaḡ ḡuine a raib̄ sé de ḡánaṡoeaḡt Ḍnn cuairt ṡaḡairt Ḍr a ṡeac* (SmḌ. 15)—Few people were bold enough to visit her house. (f) *ḡí raib̄ sé de ḡisneac aḡe out isteac* (SmḌ. 147)—He hadn't the courage to go in.

3° After a neg. (including *ḡan*) with *aḡ* :—

(a) *ḡí ḡioḡ de ḡlúḡac aḡr aḡ seite ḡan cūm aḡr* (CMḌ. 81)—His only clothing was a hide around his waist. (b) *Ḍḡus ḡan de ḡaoimib̄ mn̄te aḡ cúḡ ḡíle ḡear ḡ ceitre ḡíle ban* (ḡḡ. Bk. 1, 168)—Seeing that there were in it only 5,000 men and 4,000 women. (c) *ḡí raib̄ de ḡáir̄oib̄*



as póil Dub áct a gléas ceoil (Smb.)—P.D. had no friend but his instrument.

4° Before the compound relative (*Cf.* 1°) :—

(a) An té is breásta o'á breacairó súil duine riam ar an saogal so (S. 61)—The finest person that human eye ever saw in this world. (b) Sí bean is uaisle í o'á raió riam ann, 7 o'á mberó go deo ann—She's the noblest woman that ever was, or ever will be.

5° After the compound relative (*Cf.* 1°) :—

(a) 1 ndiáró ar tuic o'uaislió lochlannac leis (ff. II. 224)—Seeing he had slain so many Lochlannach nobles, (b) Tréis ar tuḡamair de ḡráó 7 de cion 7 o'annsaict oá céile (TBC. 165)—After all the love and heartfelt attachment we had given each other.

6° After comparatives and superlatives :—

(a) Is fearr de tarró é ná an finnbeannaic (TBC. 8)—He's a better bull than Whitehorn. (b) Ba measa de duine mé as teact dom (Im. 36)—I was a worse man on leaving them.

7° By a sort of inversion the noun of description follows de :—

Le comá de'n tsaghas san (TBC. 94)—with this sort of condition. But we say—a leicéro de comá, not comá oá leicéro.

301.—**Defining de (do)** :—(a) Is eol tuic ó camnt daoine m'feabhas-sa de rí, 7 a olcas san o'foḡlaíde (lúc. 32)—From what people say you know how good a King I was, and how bad a robber he was. (b) Do bríḡ go raió do ceangal aise ar an mbás, san teact oá ionnsaíḡe san forfóḡra (TBB. 106)—Because he had bound Death not to come to him without forewarning him. (c) ruḡ (sé) neam do roḡam (ff. II, 112)—Took Heaven as his choice.

302.—**Partitive as** :—(a) Cía'cu acu san is fearr leat?—Which of these do you prefer? (b) Oá ḡéire beirt asainn tá dearmad déanta asainn—Smart as the two of us are, we've made a mistake. (c) So—domne, duine, ana-curo acu—Any, one, many of them. (d) Do leḡis



sé an cúro acu a bí i ngáò le leigeas (CMO. 255)—He cured those of them that needed a cure.

**303.—Prepositional Phrases :—**These may be either :—

A. Substantival. B.—Adverbial. C.—Adjectival.—A. have been dealt with.

B.—1° *Bí sé ar meisge*—He was in a drunken state. 2° *le neart buile 7 badoise adubairt sé an cáimnt*—He said the words out of sheer mad folly.

C.—1° *bean gan riagail bean gan cíall*—A lawless woman is a senseless one. 2° *féar fé leic riám is ead é*—He's altogether an original fellow. 3° *Dume le Dia*, is fearr leis biaó ná bean (UP.)—A man of God prefers food to a woman ! 4° *as gac áirí 7 scian 7 scómgar* (n. 120)—From every direction, far and near.

**304.—Meanings and Uses of the Simple Prepositions :—**

A.—Before nouns and pronouns :—

1° *Ar*.—Orig. meaning—before, for, because of.

(a) Modal :—*Ar bogadó*—loose ; *ar tarang*—drawn (of a weapon) ; *ar fánaróeact aigne*—distractedly ; *ar soðar*, trotting, etc.

(b) Local :—*Ar muir*, *ar tír*—on sea, on land ; *ar tosad*—in front ; *ar deireadó*—behind ; *ar an saogal eile*—in the next world.

(c) Of the part affected. (An extension of the local meaning) :—*Do rug sé ar cluais air*—he seized him by the ear ; *ar an sgórnaig*—by the throat.

(d) Temporal :—*Ar bail*—presently ; *ar a dó a clog*—at 2 o'clock ; *ar teact a baile dúinn*—when we arrived home.

(e) Pass. with vb. n.—*Tá an gcolunn ar labairt annso*—I. is spoken here ; *ar fágáil*—to be had.

(f) In respect of ; causal :—*Ar feadas a pearsan 7 a méim (l.O.)*—because of the excellence of his person and disposition.

(g) Of measurement :—*Ar fadó*, *ar leiteadó*, *ar doimneas*, *ar doiríoe*—in length, breadth, depth, height.

(h) Dependent upon :—*Dume ar leat-súil*—a one-eyed man ; *tá sé ar beagán fágáiltais*—he hasn't much to



live upon ; fear bíos ar don caraíó sa saogál áluinn seo (Smó. 1)—A man who is dependent on one friend in this beautiful world.

(i) Of price paid :—An mór a tugaís ar an mbuin ?—How much did you give for the cow ? When the price is not mentioned or alluded to, as, not ar, is used.—*Díolfaíó sé as*—He'll pay for it.

(j) Of feelings, burdens, etc. :—*Tá ádas, brón, eagla orm*—I'm glad, sorry, afraid, etc.

(k) Among :—*Is ar do buaib-se do ruḡaó ḡ do h-oileadó é* (TBC. 8)—It was among your cows he was born and bred.

(l) Duty or obligation :—*Is ar riḡtib na múman atá onóir na múman do cosaint* (TBC. 196)—It is incumbent on the M. kings to defend M.'s honour.

(m) N.B.—*Díóó sé sin ar an té is lúḡa ar faó* (CMó. 290)—Let him be the least of all.

2° **As** :—(a) Local :—*As so ḡo nás na Ríog*—From here to Nass. *Caó as ouit ?*—Where are you from ?

(b) Temporal :—*As so amac*—from this on ; *as a h-aitle sin*—after that ; *as an nua* (or—*as a nua*)—anew, afresh.

(c) Modal :—*As eagar*—disorderly ; *as ionaó*—dislocated ; *as a céite*—asunder ; *as seib*—evicted.

(d) Various :—*As a ainm*—by an abusive name. *Do ḡlaóadó as a ainm air*—he was called by an abusive name. *Do ḡlaóadó as a ainm é*—he was called by his own name.

(e) Cause, origin :—*A feirḡ a bemeas é*—I did it out of anger. *Ní maóirte ouit as*—you needn't boast about it.

3° **Cum** :—(a) Local or temporal :—*Deó sí trí bliana déas cum na beaḡame*—She'll be thirteen next May. (b) *An teice cum na h-Éigipte*—The flight into E.

(b) End, purpose, result :—*Raḡaró sé cum críce ouit*—It will turn out to your advantage. *Cum ḡo bfeicfmn am' súilb cinn é*—In order to see it with my own eyes.

4° **Do** :—(a) Possessive :—*Finnbeannaó is ainm do* (TBC. 8)—Whitehorn is his name.



(b) Motion towards :—*Do'n tobarr*—to the well. Obsolescent, in this sense, in Munster—*go, go rí, cum* and various prep. phrases taking its place.

(c) Final (denoting purpose) :—*ús (<oo fíos)*—for the purpose of finding out ; *o'féacaimt*—to see. Now *féacaimt* (without prep.). *Da mairt liom an leabhar san oo léigeadó*—I should like to read that book (*oo léigeadó* denotes the purpose for which I should like the book).

(d) Of time :—*Do (oe) síor*—always ; *oo gnát*—usually, etc.

(e) Causal :—*Dom' (oem')* *oeom féin*—of my own free-will ; *o'aim'oeom oo oíciú*—in spite of your worst (best).

(f) Of the agent :—*Cao pé noeada ouit é oéanam?*—Why do you do it ? *As tabairt an airgíó oí oó (S.)*—as he gave her the money.

5° **De** :—(a) Motion from :—*Do léimeas anuas oe'n capall*—I jumped off the horse ; *Do tuit sé siar oe'n catáoir (Bn. 334)*—he fell back off the chair.

(b) Partitive :—*Curo oe sna n-uaisliú*—some of the nobles. (300).

(c) Cause, origin :—*Ciar' oíob tu?*—From whom are you sprung ? *Oá bárr san*—as a result of that ; *oá oeasgaib sin* (of bad results).

(d) Temporal :—*Oe ló is o'oróce*—by day and night.

(e) Of the material (as distinct from the instrument) :—*Do líonas an buroéal o'uisge*—I filled the bottle with water.

6° **In** :—(a) Local.—*istig sa tíg atá sé*—it is in the house (D.) *oo cuaró sé isteadó*—he went in (A.).

(b) Temporal.—*1 n-aon uair a' éuig amám*—In a single hour.

(c) Modal.—*'n-a cuis a táinig sé (msf. 179)*—He came on foot.

(d) End, purpose, result.—*Tiocfaró an masadó na óarírib oó*—The joke will end seriously for him. *Rağaró sé i sochar dúinn*—it will profit us.

(e) With *out* :—*As out i n-aois as out i n-olcas*—Getting older, getting worse ; *out i bfuaire*—getting colder.



7° **le** :—(a) Local (the radical meaning is “by the side of”) :—Cia táinig leo’ cois?—Who came with you? leis an aill—Over the cliff.

(b) Temporal.—le cúig bliadhna déag o’ aimsir ní raib póil Dub ’sa berrlín míle bealaig ó n-a céile—For 15 years P.D. and his violin had not been a mile apart.

(c) Cause.—tagann maic le cáirde—Good comes, if one waits for it.

(d) Instrumental.—le scin do dmead é—It was done with a knife.

(e) Passive with trans. vb. n.—Tá so le ráo—This much is to be said.

(f) Purpose or futurity with intrans. vb. n.—An Stánuigheoir a bí le teacht—The promised Saviour.

(g) With adj. denoting likeness and the contradictory :—Is cosmaic le n’ acair é—He’s like his father.

(h) Ownership, subjectivity (with is).—Is maic liom tae, ac ní maic dom é ; is liomsa é sin.

(i) With vb. of speaking to, listening to :—Cum go labartar leat—until you’re spoken to ; Éist leis—Listen to him !

8° **ó** :—(a) Local separation :—Ó bliat Cluic go Corcaig—From D. to C.

(b) Temporal separation :—Ó shin i leic—From then till now.

(c) Agent :—Do h-oirniúeas ó Óia é—He was ordained of God.

(d) Cause, origin, motive :—Ó’n iomaio dúil m-airgeas is eas tagann an t-aimleas go minic—Moral decadence often results from avarice.

9° **mar**.—Chiefly in such phrases as :—mar geall ar—because of ; mar bárr ar gac noonas—to crown every calamity ; dume mar é—one like him ; mar an gcéanna—likewise.

10° **ós** :—In adv. and compound prep. phrases :—ós aró—aloud ; ós íseal—low, secretly ; ós cómair—in the presence of ; ós cionn—above ; bun ós cionn—upside down.



11° **fé** :—(a) Of motion :—*Do rug Íosa an dáréas leis isteach fé'n tír* (CMO. 254)—Jesus brought the Twelve with Him into the country.

(b) Of Time :—*fé maidin*—before morning ; *fé láthair*—at present.

(c) Local :—*fé tuige na gréine*—under the Sun.

(d) Modal :—*Coisc spioróí a beic fé nbur smaect* (CMO. 316)—Because spirits are under your power. *fé séan, sonas, brón, glás*—prosperous, happy, sad, locked up.

(e) Partitive :—*A cúig fichio fén gcéad* (MSF. 167)—25%.

(f) Multiplicative :—*fé dó, fé trí, fé céad*—twice, thrice, 100 times.

(g) Causal :—*Cad fá 'r cruthuig Dia sinn ?*—Why did God create us ?

12° **fan** :—(a) Local :—1. *Bí Íosa ag siubal an bótar ó deas fan aban lórdam* (CMO. 315)—Jesus was walking Southwards on the road alongside the Jordan. 2. *Bí sé ag siubal fan an bóthair* (CMO. 362)—He walked along the road.

(b) Temporal :—*fan na hamsire*—all the time ; *fan lae*—throughout the day.

13° **um** :—(a) Temporal :—*um Noúlaig*—about Xmas ; *um an taca san*—by that time.

(b) Causal :—*ume sin*—therefore ; *cad uime*—wherefore ?

(c) Local :—*Cuir sé uime a cúro éadaig*—he put on his clothes.

14° **go, to** :—(a) Motion towards :—*Cad é an fad é ó Béal Feirsce go bláit Cliait ?*—How far is it from Belfast to Dublin ?

(b) Modal :—*Do cuadais i gcotuigteact go mór*—You've grown much stouter. *go mór*—*lit.*—to a great extent.

(c) Temporal :—*Seactmáin is* (=su-san) *lá muiu*—this day week (in the past). *Lit.*—a week till to-day ; *do déanfaois trosgad go bás*—they'd fast till death.

(d) For a special use in *is* sentences, see 268.



15° **101R** :—(a) Local :—**ṬÁ ṽÁḄÁṼ míle 101R ḄORCAIḢ** ḡ **ṽÉAL áṬ AN ḢÁORTÁIṼ**—There are 40 miles between Cork and Ballingeary.

(b) Followed by **ASUS**=including . . . . and :—**101R mṼÁIṼ ḡ mION-ṽÁOme (ḄS.)**—including women and children.

16° **AS** :—(a) Local :—**AS ḢEATA NA CAṬRAḄ IS EÁṼ BUÁILEÁṼAR umÁ céile**—They met at the city gate.

(b) Possession :—**ṬÁ ṽÁ ḢÁḄAIRÍN buṽE ASAM (Song)**—I have two little yellow goats.

(c) Partitive :—See 302.

(d) With **vb. n.** to express the pres. part.—**ṬÁ sé AS OUT A ṽÁILE**—he is going home ; **ṽÍ sé AS ṽÉANAM AR AN ṽṬIḢ**—he was approaching the house.

17° **ḢO**—with :—Rare in mod. prose. Found in the literature, especially poetry :—**ḢO n-10MAṼ séÁṼ (L.O.)**—with many precious stones. Common in composition. Also in **ḢO leIṬ** (with a half), and **ḢO leOR** (enough).

### 305.—B.—Prepositions after nouns and adjectives :—

(a) **NIOR fáḢ SAN 1ÁṼ ḢAN ṽEIT . . . . ḢO n-ANA AIREÁḄ ORṬA fÉm (Im. 86)**—That did not prevent them from being very watchful over themselves. **CAṬAIR ATÁ TEORANÁḄ le n-ASÓṬUS (ṽN. 834)**—A city on the borders of Asotus. **ṽÍ AIREÁḄ ṽUIT fÉm**—Be watchful in your own interests. **ṬÁ AITṼE mÁIT ASAM ORṬ**—I know you well.

(b) **CAṼ IS BRÍḢ leIS ?**—What does it mean ? **CAṼ IS CIALL leIS ?**—What's the sense of it ? **CAṼ IS mINIÚ leIS ?**—What's the interpretation of it ? **ṽÍ ṽÁ BRÍḢ leIS AN ṽFÉILE sIM (CMṼ. 294)**—This Festival had two meanings. **ṬÁ CIALL AS méIṼ, áḄ nÍL CIALL leṽ' áAMNT-se (TBC. 59)**—M. has sense—your words have none.

(c) 1. **ṽÍ AN TOBAR AR A ṽṬUGṬAR TOBAR 1ÁCÓIṽ BUÁITṬE leO (CMṼ. 138)**—The well, known as J.'s well, was near them. 2. **nÍL sé OIREAMNÁḄ ṽO RÍḢEÁḄṬ ṽÉ (CMṼ. 297)**—He's not fit for the Kingdom of God. 3. **ḢAN ṽAC le OUT Cóm fáṽA le ṽEOḄ A ṽ'1ARRÁIṼ ṽIRṬI (CMṼ. 140)**—Not to mention going so far as to ask her for a drink. 4. **nÁ ṽÍ RÓ-ṬUGṬA ṽOO' ṬOIL fÉm (Im. 40)**—Be not over-fond of your own will : **ṬUGṬÁḄ ṽO'n pEACA (Im. 45)**—proneness



to vice. 5. *Bíodh grádh aghaidh dá céile*—love one another : *tá fuath agh an mbeirt dá céile*—the two hate each other. 6. *Bí sé ró-tugtha cun na díogbála déanamh, 7 bí an iomaíocht san airgead aige, 7 san onóir* (bñ. 86)—He was too much given to injustice, and too fond of money and honour. 7. *Tá agh dul dom' misneach fé dheire* (TBC. 149)—My courage is at last beginning to fail me. 8. *Tá gach daoine buíochas de*—he's very popular.

(d) 1. *D'iarras féin ceath ar Ádéis beith ón mbáth don lá amáin* (Lúc. 47)—I also asked leave of Hades to absent myself from the boat for one day. 2. *Cíum ó fearg 7 ó buairt* (TBC. 5)—Free from anger and from worry. 3. *Is gearr ó brise riadair brise caith* (TBC. 68)—Defeat in battle is not far from breach of discipline. 4. *Is dall ó méib a ceapadh go nglacfaí i n-donfeacht iad* (TBC. 88)—It is shortsighted of M. to suppose that both would be tolerated. 5. *Táir siad agh baint óv' neart* (TBC. 150)—They are sapping your strength. 6. *Tá an áit follaím ó daoine le fad*—The place is long since uninhabited.

(e) 1. *Ní maoiríte duit as*—You've no reason to boast of it. 2. *A beith orm díol, leis, as na mairb* (Lúc. 41)—That I should have to pay for the dead as well ! 3. *Níl don ionntaíocht aghat asam*—You don't trust me. 4. *Bíodh do muintinn a Dia na glóire*—Put your trust in Almighty God.

(f) 1. *Níor fan beann acu ar anam ná ar beatha ná ar saoghal* (TBC. 127)—They no longer cared aught for life or livelihood or living. 2. *Níl don breith agham air*—It is quite impossible for me. 3. *Is bárdéamail le n-a céile luict don-céirde*—Same "trade," same "tirade." 4. *Ní raib don caoi aige ar é déanamh*—He had no chance of doing it. 5. *Pé deire beir ar an ngnó, tá deire le camnt Sath* (S.)—Whatever the upshot of this affair, there's an end to S.'s talk. 6. *Níl don fagháil aghat air*—You'll never secure it. 7. *Tá sé cóim greamuighe sin ar Dia na glóire ná cuireann sé don tsuim i neitib saogalta* (Im.)—He is so grappled to Almighty God, that he pays no attention to worldly ways. 8. *Dein iarracht air*—Have a try at it. 9. *Bí sé lán-ullam ar é déanamh*—He



was quite ready to do it. 10. *Ṭá sé oireamnac go maic aír*—He's quite capable of (doing) it. 11. *Ṭá sé socair ar beic na ságar*—He's determined to become a priest. 12. *Mó seasam inoiu orraib (n.)*—On you I rely to-day. 13. *Beir torad ar a saotar san*—Such a man's labour will not be in vain. 14. *Ópuil don taitige agat ar an nṡaoluinn a labairt?*—Have you any practice in speaking I.? 15. *Ní raib uaim aicí ar a tuille a ráo*—She hadn't time to say any more. 16. *Níl aithe (cion, meas, gráim, greim, neart) agam aír*—I don't know (love, esteem, hate) him ; I have no hold on him ; I cannot help it.

(g) 1. *Ní fearar an mberois cóm tugta cun cogaró do véanam (TBC. 61)*—I wonder would they be so inclined to make war. 2. *Tugtact cun géillead o'uahtarán (Im. 47)*—A ready obedience. 3. *Agus do toilig Símon cuige sin go fonnmar (bn. 836)*—And S. consented to this willingly. 4. *Do tugad pé nveara nár féac sé riám cun a tairbe féimis (bn. 843)*—It was observed that he never sought his own advantage.

### 306.—Prepositions after verbs :—

(a) 1. *Áitigim ar*—I convince, argue down one's throat :—*O'áiteodad sí ort gur ar meisge bí sé*—She would have you believe he was drunk. 2. *Ṣan bac do mnáib ṡ mion-daoine (CS.)*—Not counting women and children. *Ní bacfad leis*—I shan't mind it. 3. *Ní liomsa a baineann an cáinnt sin*—Those words don't refer to me. *Bain an méro sin an mórál díob (CMO. 366)*—This took the pride out of them. *An fírinne . . . . do baint aistí (CMO. 260)*—To take the truth out of it ; *Cad do bain duit?*—What happened to you ? *Ṣan cur leis ná baint uairó*—Without adding to or taking from it.

(b) 1. *Beirfar ort*—you'll be caught. 2. *Beir bean-nact óm' éiríe go tír na héireann. . . . Cum a maireann de síolrad ír is éibíir (Donnc. Ruad)*—Bring a blessing from my heart to the land of E. to all that are alive of the seed of Ir. and Eibhear. 3. *Beir leat luac cúig púnt*—Bring with you £5 worth.

(c) 1. *Bíodar ag cosc na leanb ar teact cuige (CMO.*



362)—They were preventing the children from coming to Him. 2. *ná caillir orainn*—Don't fail us. 3. *Do caill ar a misneac arís*—Her courage failed again. 4. *Níor éosam an ciúnas iad ar an asacán san* (CMO. 336)—Silence did not save them from this reproach.

(d) 1. *Caillfar a lán airgid leo san*—much money will be spent in vain on them. 2. *Do caitead cloca leo*—stones were thrown at them. 3. *Ná cait an iomao aimsire le neitib saogaita*—don't spend too much time on worldly things. 4. *Cia hé doeirir do casaò leat* (also *ort*)?—Whom do you say you met? 5. *Ní duitse is cóir é casaò liom* (S.)—It isn't you who should cast it up to me. 6. *As casaò leis an nDá tráig a tabairt leis* (TBC. 76)—trying to serve the two strands. 7. *Shá casaò m' asacán le h-Íosa* (CMO. 340)—upbraiding Jesus for . . . .

(e) 1. *Do cinnead ar cómairle*—a plan was settled on. 2. *Do cinn air é leasad*—he failed to knock it down. 3. *Sur cinn ar mnáib a cóm-aimsire i sgéim* (K.)—until she surpassed in beauty all her contemporaries.

(f) 1. *Ní cuirfó sé suas lib* (bñ. 259)—He will not put up with you. 2. *Cuir síos ar*—talk about, describe. 3. *Cuir suas ve*—give up. 4. *'Sé cúis a cuirfinn síos leis*—The reason I should assign for it is . . . . 5. *Cuir suas cum*—instigate to. 6. *Cuir cum*—attempt to. 7. *Cuir le*—send with, add to, apprentice; *do cuiread le céird é*—he was apprenticed to a trade. 8. *Cuir fios ar*—send for. 9. *Cuir fé*—settle down. 10. *Cuireadar buroean luict airm uata* (CMO. 301-2)—They dispatched an armed band. 11. *Cuir ve*—get over (work, disease, trouble, etc.); cover space. 12. *Cuir díot*—be off; undress. 13. *Bí sé as cur ve ar a díceall*—he was talking away, as fast as he could. 14. *Tá sé as cur alluis ve*—he's perspiring. 15. *Cuir tar*—put past (not suspect)—*ní cuirfinn tairis é*—I shouldn't put it past him (I'm inclined to suspect him of it). 16. *Cuir i leit*—accuse. “*Cá bfuil na daoine a bí as cur do' leit?*” (CMO. 306)—“Where are they who accused you?”



(g) 1. *Go gcuirighró an Rí leat*—May God assist you.  
 2. *An té a cabruigeann leis féin, cabruigeann Dia leis*—  
 God helps those who help themselves.

(h) 1. *Ní déanfaínn rúð ort*—I didn't do as you wished.  
 2. *Tá sé ag déanamh amac ar a dó*—it's coming up to two o'clock.  
 3. *Dó deim sé anonn ar tAòg*—He went over to T.  
 4. *Dó deimeadh saġart de*—he was ordained priest.  
 5. *Dubhairt sé leo neamh-suim a déanamh de neitib saogalta* (CMO. 245)—He told them to despise worldly things.  
 6. *Ní deimeann sé puinn taitige de*—he doesn't practise it much.

(i) 1. *Tá an uile dume aca tréis diúltú amuic 7 amac do dul cun cómraic donfir a déanamh, ar breib ná ar mealladh* (TBC. 128)—Everyone of them has refused point-blank to go to fight in single combat, either for bribe or promise.  
 2. *Dó diúltuig sé mé ar sgillings*—he refused me ls.  
 3. *Diolfaid tu as, luath nó mall*—you'll pay for it sooner or later.  
 4. *An mór a díolaís ar an mbuin?*—How much did you pay for the cow?  
 5. *Cia leis gur díolaís í?*—To whom did you sell her?  
 6. *Cia dó gur . . . í?*—For whom did you sell her?

(j) 1. *Éirigh as*—resign, give up.  
 2. *Cao d'éirigh dó?*—What happened him?  
 3. *Conus d'éirigh le Séadna?*—How did it fare with S.?  
 4. *Níorb' fada gur éirigh eatorcha*—Soon they had a row.  
 5. *Éirigh a coila*—go to bed.  
 6. *Ní éireodh sé díob* (bh. 28)—He kept on importuning them.  
 7. *Is amhlaid a d'éirigeadar cuige* (bh. 28)—The result was, they attacked him.

(k) 1. *Éist le fuaim na h-abann 7 geobaid tú breac*—Listen to the murmur of the river, and you'll get a trout! (Also *feit le fuaim*).  
 2. *Nuair a h-eitigeadh iad ar an lóisóin* (CMO. 297)—When they were refused the lodging.  
*Níor maic liom é eiteac ar rúð cóim suarac*—I shouldn't like to refuse him such a paltry thing.  
 3. *Fan ort (leat) go fóill*—wait a while (the preps. are intensive): *D'fanfaimis leat (S.)*—we'd have waited for you: *measadar . . . go mb' féidir ná fanfaid sé ar an bpocal adubhairt sé ar dtúis* (CMO. 309)—They thought that possibly he might not stand



by his first account. 4. *Go b'póiriré Dia ort*—God help you : *féac, 7 póir sinn, a tigearna*—Look, o Lord, and save us. 5. *fás fúmsa é*—leave it to me (to decide); *fás a'amsa é*—leave it to me (to keep); *o'fás sé an gleann 'sa raib ann a'am*—he left me master of the situation. 6. *fiafrócar díot cár córlaís aréir*—you'll be asked where you slept last night : *larr ar Dia don trí guróe is toil leat, 7 geobair iad (S.)*—ask of God any three wishes you like, and you shall have them.

(l) 1. *Tá sé ag gabáil do'n gcoluinn le fada*—he has been at Irish for a long time. 2. *Geobair sé o'fuipeanaib ort*—he will whip you. 3. *Do gab sé le filrdeact*—he took to poetry. 4. *Do gab sé a leat-sgeal liom*—he excused himself to me. 5. *Gabaim pároun agat*—excuse me. 6. *Imtís leat (ort)*—be off, go on. *Conus o'imtís le S?*—How did it fare with S.? *Tá an buairt úo imtísce díom*—that worry has left me : *O'imtís a bean uiró moé*—his wife left him yesterday.

(m) 1. *Do lean a gcosa de'n lic-oigre*—their feet stuck to the ice. 2. *Ná lean doo' cleasairdeact*—don't continue your tricks. *lean ort (leat)*—continue. 4. *Tá orm leanamaint siar ar an gceist*—I must probe the question thoroughly. 5. *Líon an corcán o'uisge*—fill the pot with water (the material) : *líon leis an gcupán é*—fill it with the cup (the instrument). 6. *Ná labair cum go labartar leat*—don't speak till you're spoken to : *Is air sin do labair an fáiró*—it was of Him the prophet spoke : *an tir sin dar' labramur (ZCP. II, 276)*—this land of which we have spoken.

(n) 1. *Ná leis doo*—don't allow him. 2. *Ní leogfar . . . i n-aisge leis*—he will not get off with . . . . 3. *Más oic le muinntir na h-áite an tairé do leogaint uata (TBC. 11)*—If the inhabitants are loth to let the bull be taken from them. 4. *Ná leog ort*—don't pretend. 5. *Leog doo' baot-cáimnt feasda*—give up your foolish talk now.

(o) 1. *Mait dúinn ár gcionta*—forgive us our trespasses. 2. *Do méaduiḡ ar an mbuairt aige*—his worries increased. 3. *Ní maoróte duit as do maiteas*—you needn't boast



of your goodness. 4. Is baoghlac nár sgar sé ar fógnaím leis (S.)—I'm afraid he didn't part with him to his advantage: ní féidir iad a sgaramaint ó n-a céile—they can't be separated.

(p) “ Tá mo bean i gCill Créa go tréit, 7 leac le n-a ceann,

Má tá, ar nóm scaoil léi, ní baogal ná go bfan-  
farró sí ann ”—

“ My wife's in C.C. all spent, with a stone by her head,

Well, then, just let her be—she's sure to remain there.”

2. An amlaíó nár ceart an inġean so Ábraham . . . .  
do scaoilteáó ón gceangal san lá na Sabbóire? (CMO.  
331)—Do you mean to say it was wrong to release this daughter of A. from that bondage on the Sabbath?

3. Do scaoil sé tairis mé—he took no notice of me.

4. Do scaoil sé uairó mé—he let me go without hindrance.

5. Scaoil cúgaimn an sgéal—let's have the story at once.

6. Scaoil tairt an deoc—let the drink pass. 7. Do scaoil sé urcár fúm (orm, liom)—he shot at me.

(q) 1. Seasócaó-sa ōuit—I'll support you. 2. Tá oiread airġro aġam 7 a seasócaíó dom go ceann mí—I've as much money as will last me for a month. 3. Mo seasam inġiu craib (n.)—I depend on you to-day. 4. Bíóó do seasam ionam (Im.)—depend upon Me.

(r) 1. Ċugas ōruim láma le ōroc-beartaib—I turned my back on iniquity. 2. Do tairfaimn ōruim le scamat-  
laib an tsaoġail seo (Song)—I should turn away from the clouds of this life. 3. Ní féidir ōá tairó an sgéil do tairairt ōá céile—the two sides of the story cannot be reconciled. 4. Ċuġtar cum a céile iad—let them be brought together. 5. Ní tairair ōume uairó an nír nac bí aġe (K.)—one does not give away what one has not. 6. Cáó é an amm ba máit leat a tairrí ar an leaib?—By what name would you have the child called? 7. Tairair fé—make the attempt: ċuġ sé fúm—he attacked me.



(s) 1. *Do éuarò dá neart* (TBC. 88)—his strength failed. 2. *Do éuarò díom é déanam*—I failed to do it. 3. *Annsan beir onóir as dul duit ón gcuirdeactain* (CMO. 336)—then honour will be due to you from the company. 4. *Do tuis na h-uaisle go raib san as dul na luige ar aigne na ndaoine* (CMO. 301)—the nobles realized that this was being impressed on the people's minds. 5. *Ní ró-olc a raigad greas coúlata dom*—I could do well with a little sleep. 6. *Do raigad sé i dtairbe duit go mór*—it would do you a lot of good. 7. *Do éuadais as go mór*—you've failed a lot. 8. *Do éuarò ann*—it shrank. 9. *Níl don dul as asat*—you can't escape : *níl don dul uarò asat*—you can't escape him. 10. *Téigean sí le na h-atair*—she resembles her father. 11. *Do éuarò an cluice orainn*—we lost the game. 12. *Do éuarò as na trí Colla ortá* (K.)—the three C.'s defeated them. 13. “*Téigean an maonac ó dume go dume, mar téigean an t-éan ó bile go bile*”—Yawning passes from one to another, as the bird passes from tree to tree. 14. *Do raigad sé siú tré poll taratair as lorg airgid*—your friend would go through an auger-hole for money. 15. *Níor gá dóbú dul tar an mírbúilt sin . . . cun a d'fheiscint go rabhadar cionntac* (CMO. 311)—This miracle should have sufficed for them to see that they were guilty.

(t) 1. *Ac níor táinig leo é marbú* (CMO. 336)—but they did not succeed in killing him. 2. *Táinig sé istead air*—he became proficient in it. 3. *Táinig sin istead go cruinn le n-a noubart fém*—that fitted in exactly with what I said myself. 4. *Táinig dume éigin laistis díom sa gnó san*—someone circumvented me in that affair. 5. *'Sé tíochar de go marbóctar dume éigin*—the result will be that someone will be killed. 6. *Táinig Séadna dá féadaint*—S. came to see him. 7. *Ní fulair nó ní hí seo an céad uair asat as aireactaint teact táirsi sin* (S.)—This mustn't be the first time you've heard her mentioned. 8. *Ó buirim a tís brúigean*—contention comes from company. 9. *Táinig sí leis go h-éascaró*—it offered no resistance. 10. *Tís leis sin an méir doeir plató*—what P. says agrees with that,



307.—(a) **ΔΣ**=when :—1. **ΔΣ** **πέδαιμτ** **το** **σνα** **η-Δσποτ** (CMO. 275)—when the A. looked to see . . . . 2. **ΔΣ** **τράττ** **τό** **λεο** **αρ** **υιςγε** **σίτοέ** (CMO. 302)—when speaking o them about the waters of S.

(b) **Τρέις**=when :—1. **Τρέις** **αν** **πόκατ** **σιν** **το** **ράθ** **τό**, **το** **έrom** **σέ** **αίρις** (CMO. 305)—when He had said these words He bent down again. 2. **Τρέις** **διαβλαπόμεατα** **έιςιν** **α** **θέανάμ** **ορτα**, **ευσ** **σέ** **έυίέι** **ίστεαέ** **ιατ** (S. 16)—when he had performed some black magic over them, he brought them in to her.

(c) **Αρ** **εαγτα**—for fear of—denotes the state or condition of the agent :—**λε** **η-εαγτα** denotes that the action was accompanied by fear in the agent : **ο'εαγτα** denotes that fear was the origin or motive of the action.

(d) **ι** **ζσιονν**—after—views the space of time from the beginning :—**Ραζαο** **α** **βατε** **ι** **ζσιονν** **μί**—I'll go home in a month's time : **τρέις** views the space of time from the end, backwards :—**έuas** **α** **βατε** **τρέις** **μί** **το** **έαιτεαμ** **ανν**—I went home, after having spent a month there.

(e) There is a similar distinction between **ζο** **ceann** and **αρ** **πεαθ**, both meaning “for the space of.” The former views it from the beginning, the latter from the end :—1. **Νί** **ραζαο** **ανν** **αρις** **ζο** **ceann** **μί**—I shan't go again for a month. 2. **Ρανραο** **ανν** **αρ** **πεαθ** **αν** **μί**—I shall remain for the month.

(f) **ι** **ριέ**, and **ι** **ζσαιτεαμ** mean “at some time in the course of :—1. **Τιοεραο** **ίστεαέ** **έύγαι** **λά** **έιςιν** **ι** **ριέ** **να** **σεαέτμαμε**—I'll come in to you, some day during the week. 2. **Νίορ** **λαβαίρ** **σέ** **πόκατ** **ι** **ζσαιτεαμ** **αν** **μέρο** **σιν** **αμσιρε**—he never opened his lips during all that time.



## CHAPTER IX.

### SYNTAX OF THE SENTENCE.

#### 308.—A.—Ellipsis and Change of Construction :—

The starting-point may be found in :—Ar ní derna aithrige, acht dul in derchainiud (PH. 221)—For he did not penance, but despaired. Here derna governs both aithrige and dul. But we must often assume an ellipsis. This occurs chiefly in :—(a) Adversative clauses with *ac*. (b) Non-adversative clauses with *agus*. (c) After *fé mar*, and *cóm maic agus* . . . . (d) In clauses following others with *má*, *óá*, *nuair*. (e) In other kinds of sentences :—

(a) *Níor leog sé domnro air, ac an biaó do cáiteam cóm maic is ó'féao sé é* (S. 68)—He pretended nothing, but ate the food as well as he could. (After *ac*, supply “*is amlaró a óem sé*” or “*is é ruó a óem sé.*” *Biaó*, A. or N.).

(b) *Cao na taoó nár labair sí 7 an sgéal go léir a ó'innsint dó?* (CMO. 37)—Why did she not speak and tell him the whole affair? After *7*, supply “*nár óem sí.*” *Sgéal* A. after *óem*. See also—CMO. 185, 94 ; Ser. 79 ; S. 76.

(c) 1. *Tuig na daoine . . . . gur labair sé fé mar a beao cómaet aise* (CMO. 158)—The people felt that He spoke as one having power. After *fé mar*, supply—“*a labrao óume go (mbeao cómaet aise).*” The ellipsis following the omitted *go* is dropped. 2. Without ellipsis :—*Labrann isáias fáro . . . . fé mar a labrao sé óá mbeao sé as féacaint ar a páis 7 ar a bás* (CMO. 5)—The prophet I. speaks as if he had been an eye-witness of His passion and death. With ellipsis :—*fé mar a beao sé . . . .* See also *lúc.* 40.



(d) *Ḑá neospí v̄í é, ⁊ annsan ḡo bpóspáð sí Séadna, v̄o brispeað a máctnam a sláinte* (S. 96)—If she were told it, and should then marry S., the thought of it would ruin her health. After *annsan*, supply—*Ḑá ráimigeað*, or *v̄á mba*. The clause *ḡo . . .* is N. to *ráimigeað*, or *ba*. See also—CMO. 198, 46 ; S. 103, 96 ; ḡ. 145 ; TBC. 26 ; CCU. 98 ; vn. 409.

(e) 1. *Ṭá ḡac rí acu ḡá maoróeam ḡur ḡeallað tusa v̄c fém, ac teact ar an slóḡað so* (TBC. 134)—Every one of the Kings is boasting that you were promised to him, provided he came on this hosting. After *ac*, supply “*ḡo n̄óeanfað sé.*” *Act ḡo*—provided that.

### 309.—B.—Contamination and Other Phenomena :—

1. *Cað ba ḡáð an maic v̄o lot ?* (S.)—Where is the need to undo the good ?

(a) This might be a contamination of question and answer :—Q.—*Cað ba ḡáð ?* (Regular). A.—*An maic v̄o lot.*

(b) Or modelled on—*Cað ba ḡáð a v̄óeanam ?* (Regular).

(c) Or “*an maic v̄o lot*” may be a phrase-n. gov. by *ḡáð*.

(d) Or the “Sense Construction” principle may serve. *Cað v̄o v̄éarfað an maic v̄o lot ?* or *Cað fé n̄óear an maic v̄o lot ?* (both regular) convey the same meaning.

310.—Many of the exx. in 223, G—where anteced. and rel. are both D. are best explained on this principle of Contamination :—

1° *M̄arv̄uigeaðar an uile ruð i b̄fuirm v̄uine v̄e sl̄ioct ḡaeveal v̄ár f̄éav̄av̄ar teact suas leis* (ḡḡ. 54)—is a contamination of :—(a) *an uile ruð v̄’ar f̄éav̄av̄ar*, and (b) *an uile ruð ḡur f̄éav̄av̄ar teact suas leis*. The expansion of the compd. rel. into anteced. and rel. is unsatisfactory. One would expect “*leo*” instead of “*leis.*”

2° *ḡráðmar tar ḡac n̄íð v̄ár t̄uḡ v̄uine ḡráð v̄ó riam f̄ós* (Im. 248)—is a contamination of—(a) *ḡac n̄íð ḡur t̄uḡ v̄uine ḡráð v̄ó riam f̄ós* ; and (b) *ḡac n̄íð v̄ár ḡráv̄uig v̄uine f̄ós*. Expansion of the compd. rel. would require



‘dóib’ instead of ‘dó.’—*‘Gac níó díob-san gur tug duine gráó ‘dóib’ riam fós.*

3° *‘Táinig amac as an loc an capall ‘dob’ áilne ‘dár leasas mo súil riam air (Br. 33)—is a contamination of—*(a) *an capall ‘dob’ áilne ‘dá bfeaca riam,* and (b) *an c. ‘dob’ áilne gur leasas mo súil riam air.* Here again, expansion of the compd. rel. would require *orta* instead of *air*.

311 (a) *Níl leigheas ar an meatlú ac muinntir na n-Éireann ‘do’ ‘dul’ ‘eolas’ ‘a’ ‘cur’ ‘as’ ‘a’ ‘scainnt’ ‘féin’ ‘airis’ (Sg. 84)—The only remedy for the degeneracy is for the people of I. to go and re-learn their own language. If the construction had been uniform, we should have had—**m. na n-É. ‘do’ ‘dul’ ‘eolas’ ‘a’ ‘cur’ ‘eolas’ . . . .* The sentence is a contamination of this, and—*‘níl . . . . ac go ndéanfaó m. na n-É. ‘dul’ ‘eolas’ ‘a’ ‘cur’ . . . .*

(b) *Ní raib don tslíge cuise ac muinntir na n-Éireann ‘do’ ‘cur’ ‘le’ ‘céile’ ‘a’ ‘neart’ ‘go’ ‘léir’ ‘d’ ‘iompáil’ ‘i’ ‘scomnió’ ‘na’ ‘n-gall’ (Ar. 64)—There was no way for it, but that the I. people should pull together, and turn their united strength against the Foreigner. A contamination of :—*(a) *m. na n-É ‘do’ ‘cur’ ‘le’ ‘c.,’ ‘d’ ‘iompáil’ ‘a’ ‘mrt’ ‘go’ ‘léir’ . . .* and (b) *ac go ndéanfaó m. na n-É. ‘cur’ ‘le’ ‘c.,’ ‘a’ ‘neart’ ‘go’ ‘léir’ . . . .*

(c) *Nuair ‘a’ ‘bí’ ‘oireadó’ ‘amuic’ ‘aige’ ‘i’ ‘gur’ ‘dóic’ ‘leo’ ‘go’ ‘noiúltócaó’ ‘an’ ‘curo’ ‘eile’ ‘d’é’ ‘díol’ ‘tar’ ‘a’ ‘ceann,’ ‘do’ ‘comáineadóar’ ‘an’ ‘díge’ ‘ar’ ‘siúbal’ (Msr. 26)—When he had spent so much that they believed the others would refuse to pay up for him, they instituted legal proceedings. A contamination of—*(a) *‘bí’ ‘oireadó’ ‘san’ ‘amuic’ ‘aige’ ‘gur’ ‘dóic’ ‘leo’ . . . .* and (b) *‘ní’ ‘raib’ ‘oireadó’ ‘san’ ‘amuic’ ‘aige’ ‘i’ ‘ba’ ‘dóic’ ‘leo.’*

(d) *Náró’ ‘fuláir’ ‘é’ ‘féin’ ‘a’ ‘dul’ ‘go’ ‘Ierúsalem’ ‘i’ ‘mórán’ ‘d’ ‘fulang’ (Cs. 46)—That He must go to J. and suffer many things.—A contamination of* (a) *‘é’ ‘féin’ ‘a’ ‘dul’ ‘i’ ‘a’ ‘d’ ‘fulang’ ;* and (b) *‘náró’ ‘fuláir’ ‘dó’ ‘féin’ ‘dul’ ‘i’ ‘mórán’ ‘a’ ‘d’ ‘f.’*

(e) Multiple Rel. Construction is a sort of contamination :—*‘Is’ ‘iad’ ‘is’ ‘tréime’ ‘atá’ ‘as’ ‘déanam’ ‘na’ ‘hoibre’—They*







together, and the statement is made about the combination. So—2. *Níorb'fíú leo bíorán 7 anam dume* (S. 221)—They cared nothing whatever about a human life.

(d) In “*nó go*,” until, *nó* has originated in much the same way as *nó* in “*ní fúláir nó*.”—1. *Dubairt sé go bfanfað sé ann go bfuigeað sé bás, nó go dtiocfað dume éigin gá fuasgaíl*—He said he would stay until he died, or until someone came to save him. Omitting the first *go*- clause, we get, with illogical retention of *nó*—*Dubairt sé go bfanfað sé nó go dtiocfað*. . . . 2. Or it might have developed more simply thus :—*Dubairt sé go bfanfað sé ann, nó go dtiocfað* . . . . He said he would stay, or else that someone would come. This would easily lead to :—He said he would stay till someone came.

### 313.—C.—Repetition of Words :—

1. Repetition often implies emphasis :—(a) *tuḡ sé ciall dóib 7 tuigim, 7 tuḡ sé dóib saor-toil* (CMO. 1)—He gave them sense and understanding, and over and above these, free-will. (b) *O'fuilís íosa an páis ear ceann na cine daonna, le grá do'n cine daonna, 7 do tós an páis sin de'n cine daonna an easgaine do bí curda as an bpeaca ar an gcine daonna*. (CMO. 48)—J. suffered His passion for the human race, out of love for the human race, and this passion released the human race from the curse which sin had laid upon the human race. Here the repetition is most effective. It is a solemn reminder of the universality of the sin-curse, and of the beneficent effects of Redemption.

2. When the Projected N. occurs, a pron. takes its place where the subj. (or pred. in *is* sentences) would normally be :—(a) *An té macnócað air is dóic liom go dtuigfeadh sé* (MSF. 206)—I think anyone who reflected would understand. . . . Here, if the Projected N. were not used, too many words would intervene between *tuigfeadh* and its object. (b) *An bean cos-noctaite is í a bí ann* (S.)—It was none other than the bare-footed woman (i essential, in order to avoid VS !).



3. Both the vb. and the subj. (in pron. form) are repeated, when a clause or phrase qualifying the subj. or obj. intervenes :—(a) between a trans. vb. and its obj. (b) between an intrans. vb. and the complement of the pred.—(a) *‘Oo tós an fear n-a raib an gunna ‘na lám aige, ‘o tós sé an gunna le spórt* (MSp. 27)—The man who held the gun raised it in sport. (b) *‘Cuair an tóme ‘o leigiseaó cuair sé suas go tóí an teampul* (CMO. 183)—The man who had been cured went up to the Temple.

4 Sometimes the vb. is repeated in the pl., or with a preceding particle :—(a) *‘Bí ‘aoime, ms na h-áiteanaib a bí i bpaó ó Ierúsalem, bíodar as tosnú ar iad féin a cur i ttreo taistil* (CMO. 295)—People in places far from J. were beginning to prepare for the journey. (b) *‘Dá n-abramn-se leis na fearaib úo a táinig cúgam an oíche uo, ‘já iarraio orm beic am’ stiúrtóir orca, ‘dá n-abramn ná féarfaim é* (MSp. 170)—Had I said to the men who came to me that night, asking me to guide them—had I said that I couldn’t. . . .

5. A word is repeated sometimes to avoid vagueness and ambiguity.—*‘Bí a croidé lán de ‘roóc-aighe, ac coimeaó sé istig an ‘roóc-aighe* (CMO. 58)—His heart was full of evil thoughts, but he kept these evil thoughts concealed.

314.—D.—Order of Words :—1. For departures from the normal order, see 309-313. 2. With vbs. other than *is*, the normal order is vb., subj., complement of pred. But often the whole pred. must come first, the subj. coming last :—(a) *‘Oo tlocpaó orca an bás a ‘geall ‘Dia ‘óio* (CMO. 1)—The death with which God had threatened them would come upon them. K.’s prose sometimes ignores this device for securing lucidity :—(b) *‘Go tcarla an tsoileac céadna lér léig mac na baintreabtaíoe a rún ‘óo* (Bk. 2)—Until he met the same willow to which the widow’s son had confided his secret. (Better put *‘óo* immediately after *carla*). (c) Or the logical subj. comes first :—*An t-uigse a ‘dabpaó-sa ‘óo, ‘éanpaio tobar uigse de istig ann, as fíaraó cun beata síoruroe* (CMO. 148)—The water I will give him shall



become a well within him springing up to life everlasting. *An t-uisce* is abs. The grammatical subj. is *to bair*. (d) In emphatic *is* sentences, where the pred. is indefinite, it is projected (231). (e) In emphatic *is* sentences, where the pred. is definite, it may come either first (Types IV, V., XI.), or last (Types II, III, IX).

### 315.—E.—Simile and Metaphor :—

1. K. uses metaphor freely :—(a) *Ceirín do gac créadán an crádaó* (TBB. 64)—Piety is a salve for every wound. Spiritual failings are compared to bodily wounds, which facilitates the otherwise bold statement that piety is “a healing plaster.” (b) *Luib-leigeas do gac lot an lóir-ghníom* (TBB. 64)—Satisfaction is a healing herb for every hurt. Note the alliteration, and see F.

2. In his bolder metaphors K. invariably prepares the way, by giving the fact or fable on which the metaphor is founded :—

(a) *Re triall tar lear luat-tonnac na loctó* (TBB. 22)—while journeying over the swift-waved sea of sin. Here, and in the metaphors which follow, there was a previous reference to “frail earthen vessels sailing on stormy seas in the darkness of the night.” Hence :—(b) *bóina na beadaó taóail*—the ocean of this material life. (c) *oróce na n-urcóroe*—the night of iniquity. (d) *rá doilb-CEO dubáilce 7 droc-rúm*—under the darksome fog of vice and ill-will. (e) *so cuan a críce déirdeanaige i gcurracán criad na colna*—to the haven of his last end, in the earthy skiff of the flesh. (f) *lám-óe na loct do leonaó 7 do laoraó le h-óro na h-aicrige ar leic tuim an lóir-ghníoma* (TBB. 24)—to wound and mangle the idols of our vices with the hammer of repentance on the bare anvil of satisfaction.

The alliteration in these exx. may be taken as a symbol of the comparison involved in every metaphor, and this symbolic function is a justification of the artifice, when kept within due bounds. See F.

3.—Modern prose writers use metaphor more sparingly, especially if the comparison involved is strange. Where



English has a metaphor, I. will :—(a) have no metaphor at all ; or it will be “toned down.” (b) there will be a different metaphor. (c) there will be a definitely stated metaphor, instead of allusiveness of English; or, instead of a metaphor, a simile :—

(a) 1 . . . . revealing her noble graceful hull (Wreck of the Grosvenor)—*do gheibteí raðarc ar dòmao a sleasa*. 2. who strain their eyes—*atá ag faire go olúit*. 3. forging new implements—*stigte nua aicí 'á gceapao*.

(b) The fulness of his heart would not suffer him to eat a morsel—*bí coct cómh trom san ar a croidé ná leogfao sé dó pìoc v'ite*.

(c) 1. icy temper—*oá méro doiceall 7 duairceas a bí air*. 2. the gay butterflies—*is cuma nó perleacáin iao*.

4. Where the metaphor would seem crude, it is toned down by such clauses as—*mar a véarfá*—so to speak ; *oar leat*—one would think ; or *tá* is used, + *m* + *a* G. pron., instead of a downright predication with *is* :—

(a) *b'uaibás, mar a véarfá, a gníom*—Her deed was, if I may put it so, a terror. (b) *ba cuma nó splannc, oar leat, a gníom*—his deed, if I may say so, was as a lightning flash. (c) *ní beao mo ceann na cloic, ná mo croidé na croidé me, mar atá*—I should not have a head of stone, nor a heart of fire, as I have.

### 316.—F.—Hendiadys, and Alliterative Doublets :—

Alliteration symbolizes the unity of idea involved in Hendiadys, *i.e.*, the vivid expression of a single idea by two or more words representing facets of that idea :—

1. *Bí ualac ar m'aigne, 7 sgeit 7 sgeon am' croidé* (TBC. 133)—There was a load on my mind and fright and terror in my heart. 2. *Tá tuirse 7 tromachroidé orm* (TBC. 148)—I'm weary and heavy of heart. 3. *Ní beal san binneas é* (TBC. 91)—His mouth is a mouth of melody. 4. *San cneao san créact air* (TBC. 160)—absolutely unwounded.

### 317.—G.—Illogical Elements in Construction :—

1. *Níl doinne is fearr go bfuil a fìos san aise ná aise fém* (CMO. 309)—No one knows better than him-



self. Here, instead of *aiġe fém*, we should expect *é fém*, as the sentence is a combination of :—(a) *níl doimne is fearr ná é fém*. (b) *níl doimne go bfuil 'fios san aiġe*.

2. Cf. the exx. under Contamination, 309, and the retention of *nó*, in *ní fuláir nó*, and in *nó go=until* (312, d).

3. Cf. also the use of the copula with verbal forms :—(a) *bá dóbair dom tuitim*—I almost fell. (b) *b'fachtas dom* (Conn.)—It seemed to me. (c) *isfeas dom*—I know.

### 318.—H.—Chiastic Construction :—

*Bí cumas ar ceangal 7 ar scaoile, ar neamh 7 ar talamh, geallta dó ; 7 bí geallta dó ná buađpađ geataí írinn ar an eaglais sin* (CMO. 278)—The power of binding and loosing, in heaven and on earth, had been promised him, and there had been promised him that the gates of Hell should not prevail against the Church.

### 319.—I.—Progressive Forms :—

1. often prefers the progressive forms, with *ta*, where English has no vb. to be :—1. *is móroe mo mian é cios tusa beic ġá ráđ san liom* (fSA.)—I desire to hear it all the more, since you tell me this. 2. *Bí an t-ađair ađ' iarrađ é cur cun suaimnis* (CMO. 341)—The father tried to soothe him. 3. *Sé ġnó an tsadairc beic aġ cur a ġuře suas*—It is the priest's business to pray.

### 320.—J.—Irish objective rather than subjective :—

1. *bá ġreannmar an ġġeal é*—We have thus the singular spectacle. 2. In the case of Dublin we have seen the conflict. . . .—*Do đem munnair bláđ cliađ a noíceall cum. . . .*

### 321.—K.—Irish concrete rather than abstract :—

1. "the excellencies of full-bodied narrative"—*innsint a cur air a beađ ar feađas 7 ar áilneacđ 7 ar cruinneas*. 2. "the onward sweep of events"—*ġniom á đeanam i noiađ ġnīm*. 3. "the calm and chastity



of the pauses of Fate"—*ḡaḡ níð na sṡaḡ, 7 an éinneam-aint aḡ féaḡaint anuas orṡa ḡo neam-fuaḡoraḡ 7 ḡo neam-cuiseaḡ.*

### 322.—Difference of Colouring :—

1. Less highly-coloured than English :—(a) "without taking this precaution"—*m' éaḡmuís sin.* (b) "alive with children"—*lán an bḡaill bḡaillḡṡṡe ann.* (c) "basket-chairs"—*na caṡaoireaḡa móra leaṡana.* (d) "flaming sword"—*claraḡeam noṡṡaíṡe.* (e) "children of Taliesin and Ossian"—*clann na bṡeaṡaine bḡḡe, 7 ḡaebḡil na n-éireann.*

2. I. more highly-coloured than E.—(a) "of the utmost beauty"—*ar áilneaḡṡ an ṡomam (ar aiteas na cruinne).* (b) "generation after generation"—*na seaḡṡ steaḡṡa.* (c) "the greater delicacy and spirituality"—*an blas úṡ ar áilneaḡṡ 7 ar uaisteaeḡṡ 7 ar spioraḡaíṡṡaḡṡ.* (d) "as she went over to starboard"—*nuair a luaíḡṡṡí í ṡeiseal le truime níṡṡ na ḡaṡíṡe.* (e) "I don't know in the world"—*ní féaḡar ó cúḡ árṡaib na naṡi bḡíonn (S.).* (f) "exquisite"—*álumn ṡar na beaṡṡaib.*



## PART IV.

### PROSODY.

323.—Irish metres are either syllabic or accentual. The former developed from the L. hymns of the 5th and 6th centuries (*Thurn.*), and most I. poetry, between the 8th and the 17th centuries, was written in one or other of the many varieties (there were more than seventy!). The accentual metres were introduced about the end of the 16th century, under the influence of English poetry.

### SYLLABIC METRES.

324.—*Ḍán Díreac* :—

A. *Ḍeibíre* :—*Lit.* “cut in two” <de composition form of *Ḍó*, and *bithe*, part of O.I. *benaíd*, cuts, etc. The metre was so called, because the couplets (except in *Ḍ. imrimn*) do not rhyme or assonate, as they do in the other syllabic metres. The rules of *Ḍeibíre* are :—

1° Four lines (*ceatramam*) in each stanza (*rann*). The first couplet is the *seolac* (*leat-rann tosais*), the second the *cómac* (*leat-rann deirre*).

2° Seven syllables in each line. (Elision to be reckoned with).

3° *Cómardac*—rhyme or assonance between the last word of each of the odd lines and the last word of the even lines. The initial consonant of the *Rimn* (see 4°) is neglected, but the vowels must agree with those of the rhyming portion of the *Áir-rimn*, and the following consonants must be of the same class.

The consonants are divided thus :—(a) S (the Queen of consonants) stands alone. (b) The breath stops—p, t, c. (c) The voiced stops—b, d, g. (d) The breath



continuants—ph (p, f), t (older th), c. (e) The voiced continuants—b, v, g, l, m, r; and n. (f) The double consonants—tt, m (O.I. mm mb) nn rr; and ng. When the consonants are of the same class the *cómard* is *slán*; otherwise, *briste*.

4° *Rinn* and *Áir-rinn*.—I.e., the final words of ll. 2 and 4 (*Áir-rinn*) must have at least (and in the strictest *Deibre*, at most) one syllable more than the final words in ll. 1 and 3 (*Rinn*). The rhyme in *Deibre* is un-rhythmical, for, while the *rinn* is stressed, the rhyming part of the *Áir-rinn* is unstressed.

5° *uam*—Alliteration :—(a) Any init. vowel alliterates with any other init. vowel. (b) Any consonant alliterates with the same consonant, or its aspirated or eclipsed form. (c) But p alliterates only with f or p (not p). When init. f is aspirated, it is the following sound that alliterates :—*Tagair leam, a fíait life*—Prove to me, O Lord of Liffey (l : l). ts strictly alliterates only with ts, and s only with s. (d) Only unstressed words may stand between alliterating words. When these latter are the last stressed words in the l., we have *fíor-uam*, or *uam cluaise*. Otherwise, *uam gnúise*, or *uam súla*, or *cúl-uam*.

6° *uaitne*—Union or vowel-concord :—(a) Between the word in caesura (I.e., the final word of the odd lines) and a word in the 2nd l. of the couplet. This is called *Δicil* (Anticipation), and is obligatory in the *cómard* of most non-*Deibre* metres, when the word in caesura does not consonate with the end-rhyme. *Δicil* may be *amus* (7°). (b) Between any word in the 1st l. and any word in the 2nd l. of the couplet. It is sufficient if the vowels are both broad or both slender.

7° *Amus* :—Vowel and consonant correspondence between a word in the odd lines, and a word of the same number of syllables in the even ll. The vowels should be the same, the consonants of the same class.

Ex.— *lomdā scéal maic ar múire*  
*fá moltar a míorbúile,*  
*Do gēab ar an óig n-íodam*  
*Scéal as cóir do cretíomam (AÓD, 56)—*



Many a good tale is told of M., in which her wonders are extolled ; I will tell of the pure Virgin, A tale worthy of credit.

Observe :—1. Four ll. of 7 syllables. 2. *Cómaro do slán* :— *múire* :  *miorbuile* (r : l), and *io do am* :  *creio- iomam* (o : m). 3. *Rinn* and *aird-rinn*. 4. *Uaim cluaise* :  *mairt*,  *múire* ;  *moltar*,  *miorbuile* ;  *óig*,  *n-io do am* (n- does not count) ;  *cóir*,  *creioiomam*. 5. *Amus* :— *óig* :  *cóir* (g : r) ;  *géab* :  *scéal* (b : l).

*bá t do* (Elision) :—When a word ending in a vowel is followed by a word beginning with a short vowel, the latter is generally elided. Thus :— *f do an tréimse atá síse* (KP. 62)—here the *a* of *an*, and of *atá* are both elided. Hiatus is sometimes allowed :— *No can f do beola eic*—Never have I seen any horse's mouth.

**B.—Rannai geact mór** :—1. The stanza = 7<sup>i</sup>, 7<sup>i</sup>, 7<sup>i</sup>, 7<sup>i</sup> (7<sup>i</sup> × 4). 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. There is generally *uaim*, *uairne*, *amus*.

**Exx. (a)** *Cé do am luib lú do as tar ord*  
 *1 lorg deamna, díogal gars,*  
 *Cé do am ro- gairt sainnt um sairt*  
 *Cé do am ro- brait íosa n-ard* (Cf. PIM. 13)—

Observe :—1. *Cómaro do slán* :—*gars* : *n-ard* (g : o ; both vowels short). 2. *Amus* :—*ord* : *lorg* (monosyllable—o : g) ; *sairt* : *brait* (ro- does not count). This latter is *dicill*—obligatory, as *sairt* and *ard* do not rhyme. 3. *Uaim* absent in l. 1, if the 1 of *lú do as* is consonantal ; *Uaim gnúise* :—*deamna* : *díogal*. *fior-uaim* :—*sainnt* : *sairt* ; *íosa* : *n-ard* (n- does not interfere).

**(b)** *Deacair teact ó galar gráir,*  
 *An galar dom-car fá éiac,*  
 *Ní bí an galar gan goim bróm,*  
 *Galar nac fóir luib ná liaig* (pp. 31)—

Hard to escape from love's disease, The disease that hath settled me in sorrow ; It lacketh not the wound of grief, Nor can be eased by herb or leech.

Observe :—1. The *a* of *an* is elided (l. 3). 2. *fior-uaim* :—*galar* : *gráir* ; *dom-car* : *éiac* (*dom-* does not count) ; *luib* : *liaig*. 3. *Uaim gnúise* : *galar* : *goim*.



4. Διcιλλ :—bróm : róir (amus). 5. The rhyme cīac : uīaīg is not good. c and g do not belong to the same class. The diphthongs also disagree.

C.—Rannaigeačt mór šairio (=3<sup>1</sup>+3 (7<sup>1</sup>)) :—

Δ Rī rionn,

šrō dub mo teač nō šrō pionn,

noča n-iaðfaiðear fri neač

nār<sup>1</sup> iaða Crīost Δ teač friom (Cf. PIM. 14)

O King of stars, Whether my house be dark or light,  
It shall not be closed against anyone, Lest Christ close  
His against me.

Observe :—1. uaim absent except in l. 1. The rhymes rionn : pionn : friom compensate somewhat. 2. Διcιλλ :—neač : teač. 3. Cómardao slán :—rionn : pionn : friom. 4. nār<sup>1</sup>=lest ; iaða, 3 sg. pres. Subj.

D.—Rannaigeačt ðeas :—1. Stanza=7<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>2</sup>=7<sup>2</sup>×4. 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. Generally uaim, uaitne, amus.

Ex.—Δ Eamain ioðnac doibinn,

Δs Δ pioðrað aro-férðim,

Is mór noíne ðeo' šualainn

Ro-šaið riše for éirinn (Cf. PIM. 13)—

Pleasant Emania, full of ranked hosts, Whose woods I  
tell of, Many a generation from your shoulder has  
obtained Kingship over Ireland.

Observe :—1. uaim only in :—ioðnac : doibinn ; pioðrað : férðim (aro- does not count). The uaim in šualainn : šaið may be intentional. 2. uaitne :—ioðnac : pioðrað (not amus, as c and o are in different classes). 3. Διcιλλ absent in the cómar, though there is amus—noíne : riše (n : š). 4. No elision in l. 1. 5. Cómardao slán :—férðim : éirinn. 6. Mór is neut. Hence the eclipsis. oíne is G. pl.

E.—Rannaigeačt ðeas šairio (3<sup>2</sup>+3(7<sup>2</sup>)) :—

Corp sleamán

Δsus taoð fāða reamár,

ðerð an colann Δs loðao

Is an t-anam Δs ðeamán (Cf. PIM. 14)—



Nearly all characteristics absent, except the requisite no. of ll. and syllables, and the end-rhymes. These latter make up, to some extent, for the absence of the other essentials. In the older version there was *uaitne* :—*cholainn* : *anim*.

F.—**SÉADNAÖ (SÉADRAÖ)** :—Derived from *séad*, path (or *séad*, jewel) and an old generic word for “metre,” *nath*. *SÉADRAÖ* has the collective or abstract suffix—*raö*.—1. The stanza= $8^2, 7^1, 8^2, 7^1$ . 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. *uaim* obligatory between last stressed word of l. 1, and the 1st stressed word of l. 2. 4. *uaitne* or *amus*, or both. 5. *Δicill*—between final word of l. 3, and the 2nd last stressed word of l. 4. 6. *Ceann*—the final word of ll. 2, 4, is monosyllabic.

CLANN ISRAÉL uAIR SAN ÉIGIPT  
 FA ANBRURO NIRT NÁMAÖ DÉ,  
 SO MBRIOCT NGLÉISIOMLÁIN NGEAS NOORCA,  
 ÉISIOMLÁIR DEAS TOLCA TÉ (Haic. 85)—

The children of I. of old in E., Under dire oppression  
 from God's enemies, With fully prepared magic of dark  
 spells Were a pretty exemplar of Ireland.

Observe :—1. *ƒior-uaim* :—*uair* : *Éigipt* ; *Tolca* : *Té*.  
 2. *uaim gnuise* :—*nirt* : *námaö* ; *ngléisiomlám* : *ngeas*.  
 3. The special *uaim* in ll. 1, 2 :—*Éigipt* : *anbruro*.  
 4. *Cómarraö slán* :—*Dé* : *Té*. 5. *Amus* :—*ngléisiomlám* :  
*éisiomláir* ; *ngeas* : *deas* ; *noorca* : *tolca* (This last  
 is the obligatory *Δicill*). 6. Hiatus in l. 2. 7. *Ceann* :—  
 Final word in ll. 2, 4 is monosyllabic.

G.—**DEACNAÖ BEAG** :—1. Stanza= $4 \times 5^1$ . 2. Rhyming couplets. 3. *uaim*, *uaitne*, *amus*.

DAOT SAC BEART NAC BUAN,  
 NÍ CUAN SO CUAN DÉ,  
 ÍOSA IS LÁIRE LUAM,  
 TRUAŞ NÁ TOŞAS É !

Foolish each deed that perishes, There is no haven save  
 God's, Jesus is the stoutest Pilot, Pity that chooseth  
 Him not.

Observe :—1. *ƒior-uaim* in ll. 1, 3 ; *uaim gnuise* in  
 ll. 2, 4. 2. *Cómarraö slán* :—*Dé* : *É*. 3. Elision of 1



of is in 1. 3. 4. *toḡas* is dissyllabic. 5. *Διcιλλ* in both couplets.

H.—**Θεαcηαὸ mór** :—1. Stanza= $8^2$ ,  $6^2$ ,  $8^2$ ,  $6^2$ . 2. Couplets rhyme. 3. *uaim*, *uaiṡne* or *amus*, or both. 4. *Διcιλλ* not obligatory.

*ṡearḡ an Coimṡeac̃ re cloinn Áṡaim̃,*

*Toirneac̃ roinn Δ rūin-nim̃,*

*Ní iomṡa ṡúnn in-ár nṡaoimib̃*

*ḡan túr ṡiomṡa an ṡúilim̃ (ṡṡ. 22)—*

May the Lord's wrath with Adam's children, His bitterness against us decrease ; not many of us men but merit the Creator's anger.

Observe :—1. *Cómarṡac̃ slán* :—*rūin-nim̃* : *ṡúilim̃*.—Consonants of class (f), when preceded by a long vowel, may rank with class (e) (ISP. 5) ; hence the double n does not spoil the rhyme. 2. *amus* :—*cloinn* : *roinn* ; *Coimṡeac̃* : *toirneac̃* ; *iomṡa* : *ṡiomṡa*. 3. *uaim ḡnúise* in 1. 1 ; *ṡíor uaim* in the others. 4. *uaiṡne* :—*ṡúnn* : *túr* (Or *amus* acc. to 1. above). 5. No *Διcιλλ*. 6. The Δ of *an* is elided in 1. 4.

I.—**Cas-ṡáirṡne** :—" Twisted (complex) Bardic Art " :—1. Stanza= $4$  ( $7^3$ ). 2. Couplets rhyme. 3. *uaim*, *uaiṡne*, *amus*.

*ṡíol molta maor tiḡearna*

*Ní maor so nac soḡarma,*

*ṡíú maor múir mo tiḡearna*

*Na ṡaob̃ ṡúim ní ṡolaḃra (Δṡṡ. 35)—*

Worthy of praise is the Lord's Steward, No steward this that cannot be called upon ! The Steward of my Lord's castle deserves That I should find it easy to tell of him.

Observe :—1. Seven syllables in each l. with trisyllabic verse-ends. 2. *uaim-ḡnúise* :—*molta* : *maor* ; *maor* : *múir*. *ṡíor-uaim* :—*so* : *soḡarma* ; *ṡúim* : *ṡolaḃra*. 3. *Cómarṡac̃ slán* :—*soḡarma* : *ṡolaḃra*. 4. *amus* :—*maor* : *ṡaob̃* ; *múir* : *ṡúim*. 5. No *Διcιλλ*.

J.—**Rionnairṡ** :—1. Stanza= $4$  ( $6^2$ ). 2. Couplets rhyme. 3. *uaim*, *uaiṡne*, *amus*. 4. *Διcιλλ* frequent, though not always, in the *cómao*.



SÉAN, A CRÍOST, MO LABRA,

A COMHDE SEACHT NÍME,

RO-M-BEIRTEAR BUARÓ LÉIRE

A RÍ GRÉINE GILE (P.O. Prol. 1-4)—

Bless, O Christ, my speech, O Lord of seven heavens,  
Let the guerdon of devotion be given to me, O King  
of the white sun.

Observe :—1. Six syllables in each l. with dissyllabic  
verse-ends. 2. Cómardadó slán :—níme : gile. 3. Uaim  
gnúise :—beirtear (ro-m- does not count) : buaró.  
4. Píor-uaim :—gréine : gile. 5. Amus (and Aicill) :—  
léire : gréine.

### ACCENTUAL METRES.

325.—General conditions :—(a) The feet are measured  
from stress to stress, one stress often governing several  
syllables, so that a foot may contain one, two or more  
syllables. (b) In elision, the unaccented vowel  
is elided; if both are unaccented and both short,  
either may be elided. (c) Uaim is common enough.  
(d) Unaccented syllables before the first stress are  
called the “*ruṭas*.” (e) Internal and end rhymes will  
be noted in each species.

A.—**LAOI** (laoiró ; l. fíannaróeacṭa) :—This repre-  
sents a transition stage between the old syllabic, and  
the later accentual metres.

Note :—1. Four-lined stanzas. 2. Three or four  
stresses in each line. 3. The no. of syllables varies  
from 6 to 9. 4. Rhyming couplets. 5. Internal rhyme  
in each couplet like Aicill in most non-Deibré metes.  
6. There is not the same regulated stress in the laoi  
as there is in the other accentual metres. Examples :—

(a) A OISÍN UASAIL, A MÍC AN RÍOḠ  
‘Dob’ fearr gníom gaisge agus gliaḋ,  
Aicris dúinn anois san mairḡ  
Cionnus do mairis o’éis na bfiann (L.O.).

Observe :—1. The stresses are marked. 1. Uaim in  
ll. 1, 2. 3. The end-rhyme—gliaḋ : bfiann. 4. Aicill :—  
ríogḡ : gníom ; mair(1)ḡ : mairis.



- (b)  $\bar{v}a \bar{v}eirge \bar{c}a \bar{g}rua\bar{o} \bar{n}a \bar{a}n \bar{r}os$   
 $\bar{v}a \bar{g}ile \bar{c}a \bar{s}n\bar{o}\bar{o} \bar{n}a \bar{e}a\bar{l}a \bar{c}ar \bar{t}uinn,$   
 $\bar{v}a \bar{m}ilse \bar{b}las \bar{a} \bar{b}e\bar{i}l\bar{i}n \bar{r}os$   
 $\bar{n}a \bar{m}il \bar{v}a \bar{n}-\bar{o}l \bar{t}re \bar{v}eirg-\bar{f}ion (l.O.).$

Observe :—1. Elision in l. 1, and double elision in l. 2. 2.  $\bar{u}a\bar{i}m$  in l. 3. 3. End-rhyme— $\bar{t}uinn : \bar{f}ion$ . 4.  $\bar{a}i\bar{c}i\bar{l}l : -\bar{r}os : \bar{s}n\bar{o}\bar{o} ; \bar{r}os : \bar{n}-\bar{o}l$ , in both the final consonants are in different classes. 5.  $\bar{r}u\bar{t}a\bar{g}$  in each l.

B.—**Rosc** :—Arranged, not in stanzas of uniform length, but in (generally unequal) sections, with short lines of two or three feet ; the accented vowel of the last foot being the same, in each section :—

$\bar{l}a\bar{r} \bar{g}c\bar{l}os \bar{v}a \bar{r}i\bar{o}m\bar{a}\bar{o}$   
 $\bar{m}i\bar{o}r\bar{b}u\bar{i}l\bar{r}\bar{o}e \bar{i}os\bar{a}$   
 $\bar{o}'l\bar{o}rrua\bar{i}\bar{o}, \bar{r}\bar{i}-\bar{f}l\bar{a}i\bar{t},$   
 $\bar{o}u\bar{b}a\bar{i}r\bar{t} \bar{g}an \bar{m}ea\bar{r}b\bar{a}ll,$   
 $“ \bar{s}\bar{e} \bar{e}om \bar{b}a\bar{i}ste \bar{s}eo$   
 $\bar{a}n \bar{c}eann \bar{g}ur \bar{t}eascas \bar{v}e,$   
 $\bar{o}'e\bar{i}r\bar{i}\bar{g} \bar{o}'anapre\bar{i}b$   
 $\bar{o}'s \bar{n}a \bar{m}ar\bar{b}a\bar{i}\bar{o} ” (St. S. 11).$

There are two “ sections ” here :—

- |     |  |     |   |
|-----|--|-----|---|
| (a) | $\bar{v} \left  \begin{array}{c} \bar{o} \bar{v} \\ \bar{u} \bar{v} \\ \bar{i} \bar{v} \end{array} \right  \begin{array}{c} \bar{i} \bar{v} \\ \bar{i} \bar{v} \\ \bar{i} \bar{v} \end{array}$ | (b) | $\bar{v} \left  \begin{array}{c} \bar{u}e \bar{v} \\ \bar{o} \\ \bar{a}u \bar{v} \\ \bar{e}i \bar{v} \\ \bar{o} \bar{v} \end{array} \right  \begin{array}{c} \bar{a} \bar{v} \bar{v} \\ \bar{a} \bar{v} \bar{v} \\ \bar{a} \bar{v} \bar{v} \\ \bar{a} \bar{v} \bar{v} \\ \bar{a} \bar{v} \bar{v} \end{array}$ |
|-----|--|-----|---|

There is a  $\bar{r}u\bar{t}a\bar{g}$  in ll. 1, 2, 5, 6. Line 5 might be scanned thus :— $\bar{e} \bar{v} \mid \bar{a} \bar{v} \bar{v}$ .  $\bar{m}ea\bar{r}b\bar{a}ll, \bar{m}ar\bar{b}a\bar{i}\bar{o}$  are trisyllabic.

C.—**Caomeað** ( $\bar{t}u\bar{i}rea\bar{m}, \bar{m}ar\bar{b}na$ ) :— $\bar{c}a\bar{o}mea\bar{o}$  means elegy, but poems written in this metre have sometimes no connection with the dead. Ex. (b) below was launched against the Cromwellian settlers, but its prevailing tone is one of melancholy pathos. And elegies are sometimes written in other metres, e.g., **Rosc**. The structure is :—

1. Four-lined stanza. 2. Three or four feet in each line. 3. Last foot in each line has the same rhyme all through the poem. 4. The other stresses vary in each line or in each couplet. 5. But there must be assonance between two of these stresses in each line.







2. { Scíob léi síos mé trío na gleannra,  
 { Cnuic báin buíde  $\sim$  is go binn an teampaill (CmO.11)

The metre of the couplets is :—

1.—2 (  $\sim$  | ue  $\sim$  | ú  $\sim$  | ú  $\sim$  | á  $\sim$  ).

2.—2 (  $\sim$  | i  $\sim$  | i  $\sim$  | i  $\sim$  | au  $\sim$  ).

Observe :—1. Elision in ll. 1, 4. 2. Assonance between 2nd and 3rd feet in each couplet.

(b) Amrán fém :—1. Stanza=four ll. with uniform stresses in each. 2. Five feet in each line. 3. Two feet in the line assonate :—

Ó'm sceol ar árd-muig fáil ní corlam oróce,  
 'S do breoir go brát mé dála  $\sim$  a pobuil dílis,  
 Trí ró  $\sim$  fáda  $\sim$  atáir 'na béal re broscar bíorbáir,  
 Fá deoir gur fás a lán do'n cósal tríota (KP. 19).

The metre is :—4 (  $\sim$  | ó  $\sim$  | á  $\sim$  | á  $\sim$  | o  $\sim$  | i  $\sim$  ).

Observe :—1. Elision in ll. 2, 3. Ró-fáda atáir = róo atáir. 2. Assonance between 2nd and 3rd feet in each line.

(c) Four-footed line amrán, with uniform stresses in each line. Assonance either between the first two feet, or between the second and third. For Exx. see p. 5. 54-5. and compare with Caomear.

(d) Four-line amrán, with two systems of stress, or even three, the number of stresses varying somewhat :—

An fáir a beró éan 'san aer amuig,  
 Is taicneam na gréime  $\sim$  ar sléibte mis,  
 Seaspar a bonn ar a talam go teann,  
 Is ní leaspar a ceann le náire.

Three stress-systems here :—

(a) Lines 1, 2 :—  $\sim$  | á  $\sim$   $\sim$  | é  $\sim$  | é  $\sim$  | i (ü).

(b) Line 3 :—  $\sim$  | á  $\sim$   $\sim$  | ou  $\sim$   $\sim$  | á  $\sim$   $\sim$  | au

(c) „ 4 :—  $\sim$  | á  $\sim$   $\sim$  | au  $\sim$  | á  $\sim$

Observe :—1. The stanza=2a+b+c. 2. The 2nd and 3rd feet in (a) assonate (é : é) in every stanza of the poem. 3. There is aicill úbalta between the end of (b) and the beginning of (c).—á  $\sim$   $\sim$  | ou  $\sim$   $\sim$  | á  $\sim$   $\sim$  | au. 4. No end-rhyme between (b) and (c), but the last foot



(of c) (á ~) is the same throughout the whole poem.  
5. Elision in l. 2.

(e) Five-line *amrán*—the 5th l. being a refrain—the same in every stanza :—

Mo shroíon go bráic tu, *~* a páistín óig,  
Mar taoi'n tu buarta suaithe o'reoil,  
Má tigeann tu liomsa geobair poitín is cóir,  
Agus geobair tu duais nár luathad leat fós,  
Agus seó leó toil is ná goil go fóil. (Máire Buidé  
ní Laoisáire).

The metre is :—

1.	~		oi ~		á ~		á		ó
2.	~		i ~		ua ~		ua ~		ó
3.	~		i ~		o ~ ~		o ~ ~		ó
4.	~		ó ~		ua ~		ua ~		ó
5.	~		ó ~		o ~ ~		o ~		ó

Observe :—1. *Rutag* in every l., and last foot monosyllabic. 2. The two middle feet in each l. assonate.

(f) *Amrán* with eight-line stanzas :—

1° *An Rabcán* :—(a) Eight lines of three feet each, the odd and even ll. respectively having the same stresses in the same order. (b) *Δicill* in each couplet.—

Atá mo córaio san fuicín,  
Is mo cúingir san féar san fás,  
Atá an-sóg ar mo múirear,  
Is a n-uillinn san éadac slán ;  
Atá an tóir ar mo mullaic,  
Go mmic ó tigearna *~* an stáit,  
Atá mo bróga-sa briste,  
'S gan pinginn dá bfiaca *~* im' lám. (Seán Clárac).

The metre is :—

(a) Lines 1, 3, 5, 7.— ~ | á ~ | ó ~ ~ | 1 (ü) ~  
(b) „ 2, 4, 6, 8.— ~ | i ~ ~ | é (ia) ~ | á.

Observe :—1. Stanza=4 (a+b) alternating. 2. Elision in ll. 6, 8. 3. *Δicill* *Donair* connecting the ll. of each couplet :—1 ~ ~ : 1 ~ ~.

2° *An t-Octpoclac* :—In eight-lined stanzas, when each couplet can be sub-divided into three uniform members, + a fourth of different structure, the metre is called *Octpoclac* (p. 5. 64).—



NUAIR TÉRÓIM GO TIG AN TÁBÁIRNE IS GLAOBÁIM AR AN  
Drawer,

IS ÉASCAÍO BÍONN TÁM DÍOB AG TEACT SIOS ;  
IS ÉIGEAN LE DÁRACT NÁ RÉABÁIM MO CÁNA  
NUAIR PLÉASCÁIM AN CLÁR IS MÉ AG FEADGAIL ;  
BÍONN SAOTAR AN BÁIS ORDA—" Pray, do you call, Sir?"  
NÍ FEADÁIM SAN GÁIRE FÁ'N EALAÓAIM,  
IS TRÉAN TIG AN MÁIGISTÍR GO SÉISREAC IM' DÁIL-SE,  
IS SÉIM TIG IM' LÁTÁIR IS BEANNUIGEAS. (Seán ó Tuama).

The metre is :—

- (a) Lines 1, 3, 5, 7.—  $\sim \mid \acute{e} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{e} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim$   
(b) „ 2, 4, 6, 8.—  $\sim \mid \acute{e} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \acute{i}.$

This is equivalent to :—  $\sim \{ 3 (\acute{e} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim) \} + \acute{a} \acute{i}.$   
If we call the segment " $\mid \acute{e} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid$ "  $a^i$ , and  
" $\acute{a} \acute{i}$ "  $b^i$ , then  $a+b$  will  $= 3 a^i + b^i$ , and the final formula  
for the stanza, instead of 4 (a+b) will be 4 (3  $a^i + b^i$ ).  
Note the elision in ll. 1, 4.

3° Eight-line stanzas of which four constitute a  
refrain :—

NÁR CÁILLEADÓ-SA AMARC MO SÚL,  
'S NÁR LAGARÓ MO LÚT LE FOIRBTEACT,  
GO BFAICEAD AN GRATÁIN I BPÚNNC,  
'S AN SEANA-PÓC DALL SAN GIOLLA AISE ;  
IS OSCARÓD AG COSCAIRT A NAMÁD  
LE FÚINNEAM GAC CROBAIRE CINE SCUIT,  
SCRIOSPARÓ AS INNIS GAC GALL,  
'SIS SINNE BEAS TEANN 'NA B'PIONNA-BRUIG. (Mac Craic).

- The metre is :—(a) ll. 1, 3.—  $\sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{u}$   
(b) ll. 2, 4.—  $\sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{u} \sim \mid \acute{i} \sim \sim$   
(c) ll. 5, 7.—  $(\sim) \mid o(1) \sim \sim \mid o(1) \sim \sim$   
 $\mid \acute{a} \acute{u}$   
(d) ll. 6, 8.—  $\sim \mid \acute{i} \sim \sim \mid ou \sim \sim \mid \acute{i} \sim \sim$

Observe :—1. The stanza  $= 2 (a+b) + 2 (c+d)$ . 2. No  
elision in l. 1. AMARC  $= \acute{a}$  VARC. 3. ΔICILL DÚBALTA between  
a and b :— $\acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{u} \sim : \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{u} \sim$ ; and between c and  
d :— $o(1) \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \acute{u} \sim : \acute{i} (o) \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \acute{u} \sim$ . 4. FOIRBTEACT is  
trissyllabic. 5. DALL = DULL.

4° Eight-lined stanzas without ΔICILL :—



FEARAIM FÍCE BEANNACT ORT  
 A FÁMNE—AN LAE,  
 IS GATA GILE—A SCAIPEAD—AGAT  
 FÉ'M DÁIL AG TÉACT ;  
 LEIOTNE—ANOIR ÓN BFAIRRGE—  
 IS CEO NA GCHOC DÁ SLADAD—AIGE,  
 GLÓR NA SRUT DOM' MEALLAD—ANOIS  
 CUN ADACTA—IS AER (F.D. 10).

The metre is :—(a) ll. 1, 3.—  $\sim$  |  $\Delta$   $\sim$  | 1  $\sim$  |  $\Delta$   $\sim$   $\sim$   
 (b) ll. 2, 4, 8.—  $\sim$  |  $\Delta$   $\sim$  | é.  
 (c) ll. 5, 6, 7.—  $\sim$  | ó  $\sim$  | ú  $\sim$  |  $\Delta$   $\sim$   $\sim$

Observe :—1. Stanza—2 (a+b)+3 c+b. 2. No  $\Delta$ icill.

3. Elision in ll. 2, 3, 5-8.

(g) Stanza with fourteen lines :—

- a. { Dá binnne séis a tana- $\text{g}^{\text{u}}\text{ib}$   
 ná fuinneam méar ag spreagad puirt,  
 'S ná cruit an té do treascair mis,  
 b. Cioð baot dom a ráð.  
 a. { 'S ba gile— $\Delta$  h-éadan sneactamail  
 ná 'n lile caom, 's ná— $\Delta$  an eala— $\Delta$  ar srut,  
 'S ba snuigte caol a mala suröte—  
 b. AR RÉALT— $\Delta$  DEARC  $\text{g}^{\text{a}}\text{n}$  cáim ;  
 c. {  $\Delta$  mama cruinne— $\Delta$  ar sean $\text{g}^{\text{a}}$ -cruit nár léanað le  
 práisc,  
 $\Delta$  leabhar-croð do beartað loingear, éanlaic is  
 bláic,  
 d. { Dá mionla maorda maiseamail  
 $\Delta$  h-íog $\text{a}$ r 's a scéim 's a pearsa-cruit,  
 Do  $\text{g}^{\text{r}}\text{iosad}$ is mé cum labarta  
 b. Ins na bréicrib seo im' deá $\text{g}^{\text{a}}$ ró.

The metre is :—(a)  $\sim$  | 1  $\sim$  | é  $\sim$  |  $\Delta$   $\sim$   $\sim$   
 (b)  $\sim$  | é  $\sim$   $\sim$  |  $\Delta$ .  
 (c)  $\sim$  |  $\Delta$   $\sim$   $\sim$  |  $\Delta$   $\sim$   $\sim$  | é  $\sim$   $\sim$  |  $\Delta$   
 (d)  $\sim$  | i  $\sim$  | é  $\sim$  |  $\Delta$   $\sim$   $\sim$ .

Observe :—1. The stanza= $3a+b+3a+b+2c+3d+b$ .  
 2. Elision in ll. 5, 6, 7, 9. Especially the end-elision in  
 l. 7. 3. Maiseamail, sneactamail, labarta (=lavarha)  
 are trisyllabic. 4. (c) might be scanned :—

$\sim$  |  $\Delta$   $\sim$  | 1  $\sim$  |  $\Delta$   $\sim$  | 1  $\sim$  | é  $\sim$   $\sim$  |  $\Delta$  |.

5. c. ends with b.—é  $\sim$   $\sim$  |  $\Delta$



## APPENDIX

### WORD FORMATION.

#### A.—Verbal Nouns.

326.—1° In many compounds the **root** (especially when it ended in a guttural) is inflected as a neuter o- stem :—

ΔΤΑΡΡΑĆ (ΔΙΤΕΑΡΡΑĆ), change (<O.I. ad-eir-rig, reforms). Cf. ΔΙΤΡΙΓΕ, ΔΙΤΡΕΑĆΑΣ, repentance ; CUIBREAĆ (CUMBREAĆ), binding, etc. (<O.I. con·rig, binds). New vb.—CUIBRIΓIM ; CUMROAĆ, covering, etc. (<O.I. con·utaing. New vb.—CUMROIΓIM ; FOAĆ, hiding (<FO·LUIΓIM ; TOBAC, levying, etc. (<O.I. do·boing) ; TORMAC, increase, etc. (<O.I. do·formaig) ; FUIREAĆ, detaining, waiting, watching (<fo·rig).

The above give rise to the vb. n. ending -AC :—CEANNAĆ, buying, vb.—CEANNUIΓIM ; CUAROAĆ, seeking, vb.—CUARROIΓIM ; CNUASAĆ, gathering, vb.—CNUASUIΓIM.

FULANG, suffering (<O.I. fo·loing) ; TAFANN (TATANT), driving, barking at, etc. (<O.I. do·seinn, drives). Vb.—TAFNAM ; AΘALL, adultery, etc. (<O.I. ad·ella, visits) ; TAΘALL, touching, etc. (<O.I. do·aidlea, approaches, assails) ; OIALL, declension (now OIO·CIAONAO).

327.—2° Some are neuter io- stems :—

ΔΙΤNE, acquaintance (<O.I. ad·gnin, recognises) ; EAGNA, wisdom (<O.I. asa·gnin) ; FOBA (FOGA), attack (<O.I. fo·ben) ; FREAGRA, answer (<O.I. fris·gair) ; AGRA, TAGRA, FOGRA, from the same vb. root ; LUIGE, lying. Cf. FOAĆ, above ; SURÖE, sitting (<\*sodiom—rt. sed, sod).



**328.—3°** Some are *ia-* stems (F.) :—

*Clárœ*, fence (act of digging) ; *surœ*, prayer, etc. ;  
*íte*, to eat ; *siġe*, way, road, etc.

**329.—4°** Different stems (*i-* or *a-*), but with *-t* ending in modern Irish. All Feminine :—

*bēit*, to be ; *breit*, to bear, etc. In compounds it takes the form *-bairt*. E.g.—*ṭabairt*, *ioḃbairt* ; *teact*, coming (going) ; *meit*, grinding (O.I. *mlith*) ; *ceit*, conceal (O.I. *cleith*). Cf.—*cumit*, rubbing, *coiġit*, concealing, sparing.

**330.—5°** Some were originally neuter *o-* stems, with *-to* suffix. (Cf. 326, where there was no such suffix) :—

*brat*, to betray, etc. (O.I. *mrath* < *mairnid*, betrays) ;  
*rat*, grace, etc. (no longer verbal) ; *ṽearmao*, mistake (*ṽearmao*, with unaspirated *m*, because of *ṽormaο*, envy).

**331.—6°** Masculine *u-* stems, some with suffix *-tu* others with *-mu-*.

(a) With *-tu* :—*molao*, praise ; *siṇeo*, stretch. (So all verbals in *-ao*) ; *ṽios* (< \**vid-tu-s*) ; *meas*, esteem, etc. (O.I. *midiur*, I judge) ; *comeao*, keep, etc. (O.I. *comét*. U. *comeao*). In *ṽiosruġim*, I enquire (< *ṽios*) the *r* is due to *ṽiaṽruġim*.

(b) With *-mu* :—*ṽníom*, deed ; *ṽéanam*, to do ; *ṽóġnam*, service ; *congnam*, help ; *sníom*, spin, etc. *tearnam* from same root ; *cosnam*, defend (now also *cosamṭ*) ; *tuilleam*, earn (< O.I. *do·sli*) ; *iomram*, voyage (O.I. *im·rá*, voyages).

**332.—7°** Feminine *n-* stems, with *-tiu* in old N. sg.—

*ṽíroean*, protection (O.I. *do·eim*, protects) ; *ṽoiġoe*, *ṽorōne*, patience (O.I. *foditiu*, from *fo·daim*, suffers) ; *ṽeiscimṭ* (*ṽaicsm*), to see,—v.n. of O.I. *ad·ci* was *aicsiu* < *ad-ces-tió* ; *ṽaoisom*, confession (O.I. *foisitiu*, modelled on O.I. *aititiu*, v.n. of *ad·daim*, admits).

**333.—8°** Feminine *ā-* stems (with suffix *-mā-*) :—

*Δġallam*, dialogue, etc. (G. now *Δġallma*). New vb.



ḁḡallaim ; creirdeam, faith (now M.) ; éirgeam, cry, etc. Cf. O.I. erigem, complaint; maordeam, boasting (now M.).

**334.—9° Neuter n- stems (with suffix -mn- or -smn-):—**

béim, a blow, v.n. of O.I. benaid. New vb. béimim ; céim, step, v.n. of O.I. cingid. New vb.—céimniḡim ; foḡlum, learn, v.n. of O.I. fo-gleinn. New vb.—foḡlumniḡim ; oréim, endeavour, etc., v.n. of oringirō, climbs. Cf. oréimire, ladder ; ḡairm, calling. But in compounds -ḡra (neut. io- stem), freaḡra, etc. ; léim, leap, v.n. of O.I. lingid. Mod. lingim, léimim ; marōm, rout, v.n. of O.I. maidid, there is a bursting ; réim, course, etc., v.n. of O.I. rédid, journeys ; seim (G. seanma, semme), playing, etc. (Also seinnt, semneamaint) ; snarōm, knot. O.I. naidm, v.n. of nascid, knots ; tuirim, fall. O.I. tothaim.

**335.—10° Feminine i- stems (with suffix -ni-) :—**

ḁim, tām, iomaint, tiomaint, comaint—all=the act of driving (Rt. ag, L. ago); buam, reap, <\*bog-ni- v.n. of O.I. bongid, breaks, etc. New verbs, buaimim, bainim (v.n. baint). Cf. buanurōe, a reaper.

**336.—11° Miscellaneous :—**

ḁltram, fosterage, etc.—v.n. of O.I. alid, nurtures. Mod. oilim, v.n.—oilteamaint. But there is also a verb ḁltramaim ; anacal, protection < O.I. aingid, protects ; ḁonacal, burial—a compound of the previous word ; tiorḡlacarō, gift, etc.—O.I. tindnacul, v.n. of do·indnaig, bestows ; ḡabail (O.I. N. gabál, an a- stem, with a doubtful suffix) ; reic, sell, v.n. of O.I. renaid, sells, modelled on ioc (O.I. ícc). From reic comes éiric, compensation, “eric” ; leanamaint, follow (O.I. lenamon) ; fanamaint, wait (Mid. I. anad) ; cinneamaint, fate, v.n. of cinnim, I fix, appoint, etc. ; céarḡal, chanting, v.n. of O.I. canid, sings, with suffix -tlo, can-tlo (neuter o- stem). There are two well-known compounds: claiscearḡal—singing in harmony (now M.), and—foircearḡal, instruction, etc.—v.n. of O.I. for·cun, I teach ; scríbeann, a writing, léirgeann, a lesson, etc., and ḁir-



reann, Mass, are modelled on L. gerundial forms, and are not strictly vb. nouns.

**337.—12°** The v.n. is sometimes from a root other than that of the verb :—

ḡal, is used as v.n. of O.I. fichid. It survives in—eagḡal, fear (<ek-gal), vīogḡal, vengeance (vīogḡaltas), fōgḡalt, robbery, fōgḡlūde, robber, togḡalt, destruction (Earlier togal), fionḡal, the murder of a kinsman; searc, v.n. of caraid. loves. Déirc (<Dé+searc), the love of God, alms; ráð, v.n. of ráidid, is now v.n. of veirim, I say, the old v.n. of which—epert, now abairt—means phrase, sentence; teact, v.n. of O.I. tiagu (now téigim) is used as v.n. of tigim, tagaim, while out is used as v.n. of téigim.

### B.—Other Nouns.

**338.—I.**—Combination of adjective and noun :—

Deag-cómairle, good advice; iolar, many people, things (<il, many and fear); áro-rí, high King; fionn-barra, “fair-head,” St. Fionbarr; mór-cúis, self-esteem; gearr(á)-cúro, a considerable number (amount).

**339.—II.**—Combination of noun and noun :—

Talam-cúmscuḡað, earthquake; muir-bran, sea-raven; riḡ-teac, palace; fíoth-cat, mousetrap, *lit.*—wood-cat; marc-sluaḡ, cavalcade; briatar-cat, word battle; tūn-marḡað, homicide; ban-čara, woman-friend; bamis (bam+feis), wedding-feast; anam-čara, spiritual director; fion-ḡort, vineyard; aball-ḡort, orchard.

**340.—III.**—Combination of indeclinable particle (other than a preposition) with a noun :—

Soiteas (<so+teas), comfort, etc.; soiceall, joy, opposed to voiceall, churlishness; sočar, profit, opposed to vočar, loss; mí-meas, disrespect; mí-sásam, dissatisfaction; mí-maise, ugliness; mí-teist, infamy; veogair, diphthong (<de-fogair). De is composition form of dó, two; ana-lá, a great day; ana-čabairt amac, a



great display ; *bíct-ḡríḡ*, essence ; *ḡon-mḡac Ṯé*, the only Son of God ; *mḡeom* (*ḡimḡeom*) in phrase *mḡeom*, in spite of ; *ḡimeolas*, ignorance ; *ḡimḡeise*, affliction, etc. ; *ḡimḡian*, passion ; *éḡscóir* (<*en-cóir*), injustice ; *éḡscarḡeḡct*, promptitude (from *scíct*, weariness) ; *ḡimḡeas*, disimprovement, etc. ; *ḡmḡas* (<*ḡimḡreas*, *lit.*—want of faith), doubt *neamḡiḡ*, nothing ; *neamḡum*, carelessness.

341.—IV.—By means of prepositional prefixes. (Some vb. nouns are included) :—

1° The prep. *ḡo*, Lat. *ad* :—

(a) Before vowels and old *u*, it appears as *ḡo* :—

*ḡonacat*, burial (<*ad-anacal*) ; *Ṯaiḡḡse*, ghost, v.n. of O.I. *do-ad-bat*, shows ; *ḡoraḡ*, adoration.

(b) The *o* assimilates with *Ṯ*, *o*, *c*, *ḡ*, *b*, *m* :—

*ḡitreḡ*, dwelling, <*ad-treabh*, with *ḡ* because of *ḡit* ; *ḡouḡḡ*, kindling (fire), from *ḡo-ḡóḡḡ* ; *ḡicsin* (*Ṯeis-cimṮ*), from \**ad-ces-tio* ; *ḡmus*, aim, etc., from *ad-mess*.

(c) Before *l*, *n*, *r*, it becomes *ḡ* :—

*ḡil*, pleasure, from *ad-li* ; *ḡram*, counting, from *ḡo-ríom* ; *ḡinsrḡ*, Accusative case, from *ad-ness*—(O.I. *áinsem*).

(d) With the preposition *oḡ* following, it combined to form generally *eḡ*, *rḡ*, and in modern I. *ioḡ*, *iḡ* :—

*íoḡḡḡirṮ*, *iḡḡirṮ*, sacrifice, from O.I. *ad-od-beir*, *ad-opair*.

342.—2° The prep. *ḡr* :—

When stressed it appears in modern Irish as :—

(a) *Oir*.—*oirḡearcas*, conspicuousness (from *Ṯearc*).

(b) *Ur*, or *úr*.—*úrnuḡṮe*, prayer, prayers. O.I. *er-ini-gude*, *irnigde* ; *úrḡḡra*, speech, rhetoric. Syncopated in *ḡirḡe*, repentance (O.I. *ad-eir-rige*).

343.—3° The prep. *ḡíct* (*ḡícte*). It has three forces in modern Irish :—*reiterative*, *intensive* and *negative* :—

*ḡíctne*, acquaintance ; *ḡícteasc*, answer (Same rt. as in *cosc*, check) ; *ḡíct-lá*, another day ; *ḡíctḡilam*, New Year ; *ḡíctumḡe*, request ; *Ṯḡḡoir*, reproach.



**344.—4° The prep. céad :**—

Found only in céadṛaid, sense. Thurneysen equates it with Gk. κατά. We have the same formation in W. canfod, to perceive.

**345.—5° The prep. com (L. cum, con-) :**—

(a) Before vowels, and t, n, r,—cóm :—

Cómaíre, advice ; comṛeac̃t, accompanying ; com-luad̃ar, company ; cómnasc, conjunction ; cómrád̃, conversation.

(b) Before i, e, u, sometimes cum (cuim) :—

Cuimreac̃ (cuibreac̃), binding ; cúmsanaḁ, repose, etc. (cóm-uḁ-ess-anadh ?).

(c) Before o, con ; before s, con- combining with s to form ns (single consonant) :—

Comṛeas̃, comparison ; congnaim̃, help (nsgn=nn) ; congbaít, to keep.

(d) It eclipses t, c, giving coo-, coḡ- :—

Coṛlaḁ, sleep (<con-tulud) ; coḡaḁ, war (<con-caṫ) ; coḡar, whisper (<con-cor).

(e) Before s it becomes co- (with original doubling of s) :—Cosmaít, like (<samaít), cosamlaṫt, likeness ; cosnaim̃, protection (<co-sníom̃).

(f) Before old v the m disappears in cuarḁ (com-ved) ; so in cumne (com-men). But cumasc, mixture, and cumilt̃, rubbing, have unaspirated m. In other cases m—v (f) give ḁ :—cuḁus, conscience, <ṛios ; cuḁaḁ, cuibe, fitting (com+fid). Noun cuibeas ; coibneas, relation (com+fine+as).

(g) In borrowed words :—

1° **Con** (com) renders the L. con- :—

Combtioṫt, conflict (with eclipsis of ṛ-) ; comtinn, contention ; coínsias, conscience.

2° **Com-** before p :—

Compóro, comfort ; comparáro, comparison ; compánaṫ, companion. But see other exx. under (h).

(h) In later compounds the antevocalic form cóm- is used before all consonants, and aspirates (in imitation of réam- before) :—

Cóm̃tíonól, gathering ; cómbṛúḡaḁ, contrition ; cóm-ḡuaíseac̃t, simultaneous movement ; cómp̃aírc̃r̃oe, part-



ner ; cômceangal, union ; cômòalta, member of a society ; cômhadoròeam, congratulation.

**346.—6°** The prep. **oí, oe** :—

(a) Before vowels, and most consonants, **oí** :—

oíall, declension ; oíogbáil, injury ; oítreab, hermitage ; oímeas, disrespect ; oíocumne, forgetfulness ; oíbreirg, vengeance.

(b) Before **ro**, and broad **c, g, b**,—**oe** :—

oearmao, mistake, etc. ; oeacor, difference ; oeanaam, to do (with compensatory lengthening) ; oeabairò, strife (de+buith).

**347.—7°** The prep. **as** (L. ex.) :—

(a) Before vowels, and **c, t, s**,—**eas, eis** :—

easonóir, dishonour ; eisiompláir, example ; eisceact, exception to a rule ; eascara, enemy ; teastabáil, v.n. of O.I. do·esta, is wanting, etc. ; easláinte, illness (eas-sláinte).

(b) Sometimes **ais** :—

aiséirge, resurrection. Perhaps due to **ais** in tar n-ais, back. Cf.—aiseas (<ioc), restitution : vomiting ; aisnéis, predication.

(c) Before **l, m, n, r**, it becomes **é** :—

éalóò, escape, etc. (ess-lud) ; éirte, weakness. Now mirte, owing to inert, inertia ; éiric, compensation (ess-reic).

(d) Before **b, o, g**, it appears as **ek-** with assimilation of **k**, giving unaspirated **b, o, g** :—

abairt, phrase=O.I. epert<\*ek-bert ; eagal, fear, <\*ek-gal.

**348.—8°** The prep. **gan**, O.I. cen :—

Only in ceanntar, the district on this side, as opposed to altar (obs.) the district on the other side. The radical meaning of O.I. cen was “on this side of,” hence “without.” Cf.—L. cis, citra ; Gk. ἐκεῖ, there ; and I. bith cé, this world here.

**349.—9°** The prep. **uir, eadar**, L. inter :—

eadarguróteoir, intercessor ; Oaródom, Thursday—



“the day between two fasts.” *roir* causes aspiration (imitating *ar*). If *‘Oar’daom* is from “‘*Oar’da’daom*,” the non-aspiration of the second *o* may be due to *Céad’daom* (which it follows), or to assimilation to the initial *o*.

350.—10° The prep. *ro* (Modern *ró*, *ré*, *rá*, *raoi*) :—

(a) Before consonants, *ro*, *ró* (with compensatory lengthening) :—

*roige*, *roine*, patience ; *rógnam*, service.

(b) Before *o*, *a*,—*ró*, *rua*, *rá* :—

*rógra*, announcement (*fo-od-gaire*) ; *róbairt*, attack (*fo-od-bert*) ; *ruasnao*, tumult (*fo-od-ess-anad* ?) ; *rágáil*, leaving (*fo-ad-gabháil*).

(c) Before syncopated *a* in second syllable—*ra* :—

*rágáil*, to get (*fo-gabháil* ; *rágáiltas*, means, property).

351.—11° The prep. *for*, Gk. *ὑπέρ*, L. *super* :—

*formaó*, envy (*for-ment-*) ; *foráil*, excess. With metathesis, *fuláir*, unnecessary ; *forghnuigteoir*, a builder (CMD. 338). Often with *ó*, and aspirating :—*foirceann*, the very end ; *forlamas* (*forlamas*), usurpation, etc. ; *foirneart*, tyranny.

352.—12° The prep. *frí*(*t*). Root *vrt.* of L. *vorsus* :—

(a) Before vowels, *frít* :—

*frítim*, return track ; *fríochálam*, service ; *arís*, again < a *frith-éissi*, Accus. of Space.

(b) Before consonants, the orig. *th* of *frith* assimilates:

*freagra*, an answer (<*frith-gaire*).

(c) Later compounds show *frít* before consonants (aspirating like *ait-*) :—

*fríochbualao*, repercussion ; *fríochnam*, care, diligence = earlier *frithgnam* (<*gníomh*). *Th* became *h*, unvoicing *gh*. The long *i* may be due to *críochnamáil*, which has the same meaning as the adj. *fríochnamáil*.

353.—13° The prep. *iar*, after :—

*fiapruíoe*, enquiry (*v.n.* of O.I. *iarfóig*, with prothetic *f*, metathesis of *r* and *f*, and (in finite verb forms) assimilation to verbs in *-is* ; *iartar*, West (aspiration in imitation of *oirtar*). So *iar-míoe*, *iar-múma* ;



iarlann, pantry ; iariscúil, backward place ; iarmbéarla, adverb, etc.

354.—14° The prep. *imbi*, *im* (modern *um*) :—

(a) Before vowels and *r*—*im*, *iom* :—

*imeagla*, great fear ; *iomáin*, hurling ; *imreimre*, obesity ; *tímceall* (with *to*-), round, about.

(b) Before *s*—*imp* :—

*iompóó*, to turn (<*imbi-soud*) ; *impróe*, supplication (<*imbi-suróe*). But later :—*imsearc*, warm affection. *imníom*, fatigue, etc.

(c) Before other consonants, *im*- (aspirating) :—

*imteacht*, going away ; *imbeargadó*, reviling, etc. ; *m-imiscém*, afar. (A contamination of *mcém* and *iscém*).

355.—15° The prep. *in* :—

In composition it has three forms, *in*-, *en*- and *ini*- (Gk. *ἐνί*), and a fourth form *ind*- is probably identical with the L. prep. *endo*, *indu* in *induere*, to put on, *Induperator*, archaic form of *Imperator*.

(a) *en*—which becomes *é* before *c*, *τ* :—

*Éisteacht*, listening. O.I. *étsecht* ; *éascóir*, wrong. In *teagdas*, teaching, and *easgar*, arrangement, the short *e* is irregular.

(b) *in*o- (now *ionn*) :—

*tionnscadóal*, a beginning, v.n. of O.I. *do·in·scanna* ; *tionnscál*, design, etc. (Pron. *tiŋscal* in W. Munster) ; *tionntóó*, turning (<*to-indi-soud*) *ionnarba*, exile (O.I. *indarbae*) ; *ionnraó*, attack (K.), O.I. *indred*.

(c) Before vowels, and many consonants, *in* :—

*infiúadó*, scanning ; *inro*, Shrovetide. L. *initium*, beginning (of Lent) ; *mbea*r, estuary ; *timpeadó*, aspiration. O.I. *tinfed* <*to-in-fed* (*sved*).

(d) *in*i- :—

*úrnuigte* (See 342) ; *mgean*, daughter, Ogham *inigena*. Cf. L. *indigena*, native.

356.—16° The prep. *ó* (*ua*, *oó*, *uadó*) :—

(a) Syncopated :—

*loóbdairt*, sacrifice ; *óiomus*, pride (<*di-ud-mess*) ;



cúmrac, protection, etc. (<com-ud-ding—conutaing).

(b) After *po*, *ro*, *to*, we get *pó*, *ró*, *tó* :—

*ḡóḡra*, announcement ; *tóḡáil*, raising. In *tobar*, well, and *tosac*, beginning, the short *o* is irregular.

(c) Before *ι*,—*ó* :—

*ṡionól*, a gathering.

**357.—17°** The prep. *re*, before :—

The composition form in modern I. is *réamh*.

*Réamh focal*, preposition ; *réamhráð*, foreword ; *réamhteachtáiríe*, antecedent (of relative).

**358.—18°** The prep. *ro*, L. *pro* :—

*Roḡa*, choice (subjective), *toḡa* (objective) ; *ros*, promontory (<*prosthā* ?) ; *ṡearmáð*, mistake, etc.

**359.—19°** The prep. *seac* :—

*Seachtarad nōvlas*, Xmas box (<2 sg. prep. pron. *seachtar*, past you).

**360.—20°** The prep. *tar* :—

*ṡoirmeasc*, confusion, etc. ; *ṡairmteacht*, transgression.

**361.—21°** The prep. *to* (pretonic, *ṡo*) :—

(a) Before consonants—mostly *to* (*tu*), *tó* (with compensatory lengthening) :—

*ṡuirtim*, falling, O.I. *tothaim* ; *tómas*, riddle, etc. (<*to-fo-mess*) ; *ṡi-* in *ṡiḡeacht* (modelled on *ṡiḡim* ?). O.I. *tuidecht*, with *ṡ* for *th*.

(b) *ṡa*, *ṡá* :—

*ṡabairt*, <*to-bert*, because of the Perf. *tarat* (<*do-rat*) ; *ṡárla*, happened, <O.I. *tarla* (<*do-rala*).

(c) *ṡe-* in *ṡeirtḡim*, I throw away, v.n. *ṡeirtḡean*. From *to-en-léig* <*teillg*, *teilg* (*Thurn.*, 481).

(d) *ṡi-* in Conn. Fut. *ṡiubhrad*, on the model of the old reduplicated Fut. with *i* in reduplicating syllable.

(e) Before vowels, *ṡ-* (*tó*, *ṡua*, before *oð-*, *tóḡáil*) :—

*ṡám*, drove, etc. (<*to-ag-ni-s*) ; *ṡuirtḡim*, *ṡimceall* (*i* because of *position* before *-mbc*).



(f) **τó-** before **por**, **oð** :—

**τóρμας**, increase, v.n. of O.I. **do·for·maig** ; **τόζάιλ**, raising, <to-od-gabáil.

**362.—22°** The prep. **τρέ** :—

**τρίαι**, journey. Cf. **αὐάιλ**, **ταὐάιλ**, **οἰάιλ**, from the same root.

**V.—By means of Suffixes.**

**363.—A.—From adjectives :—**

**1°** The suffix **-e** (=old **-ia**) :—

**ῥάιτε**, welcome, from **ῥάιρò**, joyous ; **ῥυαίρε**, coldness. With many adjectives, however, this suffix is not used. E.g.—**μόρ**, **βεας**, etc, those in **-αῖμαί**, or those ending in a vowel.

**2° -e** (< **-io**, orig. neut. stems) :—

**Ὀεῖσε**, prettiness, etc. ; **μαῖσε**, beauty. Now F. like those in **1°**.

**3° -ise, -se** (an extension of **2°**) :—

**Σαοίρσε**, freedom ; **Ὀαοίρσε**, bondage. Now F. like **1°** and **2°**.

**4° -tut.** O.I. Nom. in **-u** (Now in **-a**, or **-e**) :—

**βεατᾱ**, life, O.I. **bethu** ; **σλάμτε**, health, O.I. **slántu**.

**5° -as.** Old **-us** < **essus**, **estus** ; and **as** from **-assus** :—

**ἰοννράσας**, uprightness ; **βιννεας**, melody. O.I. **bin-dius**.

**6° -s**, from monosyllabic adjectives :—

**Ὀαοίς**, folly (**βαοτ**) ; **ῥαοίς**, wisdom (**ῥαοτ**, wise) ; **ῥνάς**, fashion (**ῥνάτ**) ; **σείος** (**scís**), fatigue (**scít**).

**7° -αῖτ** (Collective and abstract) :—

**Κοσαῖμαῖτ**, likeness, etc. ; **κλῖστεαῖτ**, cleverness ; **μόρῶαῖτ**, majesty ; Nouns in **-αῖτ** from adjectives in **-μαρ** seem to come through the abstract in **-e** :—**λίονμαρ**, numerous, gives **λίονμαίρε**, **λίονμαίρεαῖτ** ; **νεαρτμαρ**, strong, gives **νεαρτμαίρε**, **νεαρτμαίρεαῖτ**.

**8° -α** (Now mostly **-e**. O.I. **bochta**, poverty, now **βοίκτη**). But—**ῡρλαβρα**, speech ; **ceannsa**, gentleness (Now usually an adj. The old adj. was **ceannais**. K. has **ceannais**).



9° -**tas**, -**vas**=Mid. I. *tu+as*. The former is used after consonants, the latter after vowels :—

**Bréantás**, putridity, Mid. I. *bréntu* ; **dorcadás**, darkness, Mid. I. *dorchatu*.

10° -**ar**, -**acar** :—

**lotar**, many, from *lt-* ; the few in -**acar** may have originated in **salacar**, dirt, from **salac**, dirty (lit. *sala-cious*) ; **lagacar**, weakness ; **mallacar**, weakness (mostly of sight).

11° -**t**, from adjs. in -**ac** :—

**feadomannaet**, stewardship ; **cartannaet**, charity.

12° -**ao** :—

**uatáo**, singleness, etc., either from the *rt.* seen in *Gk.* *αὐτός* self, same, or from *pau-* as in *L.* *paucus*, few.

13° **íoe** (preceded by a dim. suffix -**qo-**) :—

**Seancároe**, story-teller. Cf. *L.* *senex*, *I.* **seancas**, history, etc. The *L.* *re-ci-pro-cu-s*, going backwards and forwards, contains the suffix -**qo-** twice.

14° -**seac**, a *F.* termination. Cf. *L.* -*issa* :—

**ḡaittseac**, foreign women, ear-wig ; **céirseac**, female blackbird (**ciar**, black) ; **bámseac**, white cow ; **minnseac**, young she-goat (*mionn-án*, *meann-án*, kid) ; **ḡirreseac**, girl (**ḡearr**). **lóngseac**, exile, etc., does not contain this suffix, but -**ac** from *lóngas* exile, etc.

15° **is-tero-**. A double comparative suffix found in :—

**Sínnsear**, elder, ancestor <*sen-is-teros* ; **sóisear**, junior (*O.I.* *óssar*) modelled on the preceding. The suffix -**is-** is the weakest form of the compar. suffix found in *L.* *iōs*, *ies*, *is*. (*L.* *major* <*mag-iōs* ; *majestas* <*mag-ies-tas* ; *mag-is*).

16° -**ac** :—

**fásac**, desert, from **fás**, waste, *L.* *vastus*.

17° -**ine**. Cf. *L.* -*inia* :—

**fírmne**, truth.

18° **ós** :—

**ḡnátós**, wild beast's lair ; **ciarós**, black chafer (**ciar**, black).

19° -**án** (dim.) :—

**beagán**, little, few ; **mórán**, much, many ; **ciarán** (man's name).



## 364.—B.—From nouns :—

1° -**Δ**CT :—

TEΔCTAIREΔCT, message ; PιTPOEΔCT, poetry ; breiTEΔM-  
NACT, judgeship. From nouns like this last one—ΔMNACT,  
spread. E.g.—Bibdamnacht, from bibdu (a dental stem).  
Hence biTEΔMNACT, thief, villain.

2° -**Δ**CTAIM (in vb. nouns, -ΔCTAIMT, -CΔAIMT) :—

CuroEΔCTAIM, company ; AIREΔCTAIMT, hearing ; AIT-  
beoCΔAIMT, reviving. In vb. nouns -ΔCTAIMT seems to  
come from beannaCTAIM, mallaCTAIM (D. sg.), with -T  
added, as in PANAΔAIMT, leanaΔAIMT.

3° -**Δ**S :—

LANAMNAS, carnal intercourse ; ΔOΔICTRAS, adultery.  
This contains also the compar. -ter (syncopated, -tr),  
with reminiscence, no doubt, of L. adulter, adulterium.  
The other form, ΔOΔICTRANAS, from ΔOΔICTRANNACT, which,  
perhaps, owes its -ANNACT, to EΔCTRANNACT, foreigner.

4° -**ISSE**, Mod. -**ISE** :—

PiΔONAISE, witness, O.I. fiadu, a witness, G. fiadan.  
There is no need to call in the Mid. Eng. witnesse to  
explain our form.

5° -**RAO**, -**RAO**, collective.

luAITREAO (luAITREAC) ashes. Cf. L. lavo, I wash.  
Ashes are Nature's soap ; oigRE(ΔO), ice, O.I. aig-red ;  
gniomRAO, deeds. From this gniomarCTA, used as Pl. of  
gniom. Cf. connarCTA, Pl. of connraO ; laoCRAO, fighting  
men. L. laicus, layman (Clerics were exempt from  
military service) ; macRAO, youths ; samRAO, Summer  
(Gk. ἡμέρα, day) ; gemREAO, Winter (L. hiems).

6° -**LAIT**, collective (Really the n. PΛAIT, Kingdom) :—  
EANTLAIT, birds (the bird Kingdom).7° -**TRACT**, collective :—

banTRACT, women-folk.

8° -**AIRT**, collective :—

ConAIPT, hounds. Possibly the noun sRAIT, series  
(Cf. L. sero). For the change in form in compounds,  
cf. breiT, TAOΔAIPT, etc.

9° -**LAC**, collective. (The n. stOG, stuAG, host) :—

TEAGLAC, household ; muCLAC, piggery, drove of pigs.

10° -**IOE** (earlier -**RO**, -**ITH**), denoting the agent :—

ScEΔlarOE, story-teller ; ammnROE, the Nominative.



11° -**am**, -**eam**, denoting the agent :—

**breiceam**, judge ; **féiceam**, debtor, from **fiada**, debts ;  
**tuam**, pilot, <\*pleu- ; **Dúileam**, Creator, from **dúil**,  
creature, element. **feallsam**, philosopher, is assimilated  
to this class. Earlier **felsub**, from L. (Gk.) **philosophus**.

12° -**aire** (L. -ārius), denoting the agent :—

**Teachtair**, messenger ; **básaire**, executioner ; **reachtair**,  
law-giver ; **álair**, brood-mare.

13° -**óir**, agent, instrument :—

**Dóirseoir**, door-keeper ; **comhleoir**, candlestick.

14° -**úir**, -**túir**, agent :—

**Dochtúir**, doctor ; **créatúir**, creature, is, like Eng.  
creature, derived from L. **creatura**.

15° -**tóir**, -**dóir**, -**adóir**, also denote the agent :—

**Ceoltóir**, musician ; **spealtadóir**, mower ; **bréagadóir**,  
wheedler ; **seanadóir**, senator ; **Purgadóir**, Purgatory.  
From these last two the suffix -**adóir** spread.

16° -**án**, diminutive :—

**Uíomán**, elm. O.I. **lem**, L. **ulmus** ; **cnocán**, hillock ;  
**corcán**, pot, from **crocán**, from E. **crock**.

17° -**ḡán**, -**ḡḡán**, diminutive :—

**Íosaḡán**, little Jesus ; **ḡoḡḡán**, Egan, <ḡoḡ. We  
may have here a blending of the **Britannic -og** (=I. **ac**)  
with -**án**. Or **ḡ** may be due to **beaḡán**, etc. We find  
also :—

-**acán**—**méaracán**, thimble ; -**acán**—**scaḡacán**, strainer ;  
-**nacán**—**samnacán**, salmon-trout, from **sam**, summer ;  
-**adán**—**bréagadán**, toy, **bioránadán**, pin-cushion ; -**racán**  
**bogracán**, blubberer.

18° -**naid** (-**naic**), diminutive :—

**blátnaid**, Little Flower ; **deanncaid**, flea, <**dearg-**  
**naid** ; **Gobnaid**, St. Gobnait ; **diatlaid**, saddle, may also  
have this suffix ; **truaghaic** (KP. 75), poor wretch.

19° -**ín**, diminutive :—

**firín**, little man ; **noirín**, little Nora.

20° -**ós**, -**tós** (diminutive originally) :—

**Srúeós**, fairy ; **mioltós**, gnat ; **cuasnós** (**cúnsós**) nest  
of honey-bees—from **cuas**, recess, hollow.

21° -**ne**, -**ine**, diminutive, collective, singulative :—

**foirtne**, single hair—from **foit** (collective) ; **ḡráinne**,  
a grain ; **amḡtine**, stormy weather—from **anḡo**, storm.



## 22° -lo (I. -al) :—

tuatal, withershins. Cf. tuarò, North (the left) ;  
 veiseal, the turn to the right ; teimeal, darkness ;  
 néal, cloud—from neb-lo. L. nebula.

## 23° -anas :—

tréròeanas, abstinence. (Three days, three days' fast and abstinence—from tréròe, three things, under the influence of L. triduanus. Cf. aòatranas. 3°.)

## 24° -ceart, with local meaning :—

tuaisceart, the North (the -s- is due to veisceart, the South).

## 25° -lann, where things or persons are kept :—

beaclann, apiary ; leabarlann, library ; ocharlann, infirmary ; amarlann, theatre ; airmleann, armoury ; biaðlann (*Oriel*), kitchen. Annlann, sauce, contains the root of W. llyn, drink. Cf. I. linn.

## 26° -tas, -tás :—

aitéantás, knowledge ; fiaðantás, wildness ; úgðartás (úgðarás) authority. Mid. I. augtortas.

## 27° -ac :—

conntac (conntac), stubble—from Mid. I. condall, stalk, stubble.

28° -arnac (In some instances, from -ar and -nac, the suffix -ac with accretion of n from n- stems) :—

Coḡarnac, whispering ; clagarnac, heavy rain. In these two the suffix is really -nac. From them may have spread -arnac ; cnagarnac, crackling ; liacarnac, sighing ; luibearnac, weeds ; siosarnac, whispering (siosa, a hiss) ; ḡnúsarnac, soft lowing of a cow.

## 29° -actac, collective or iterative :—

casactac, coughing—from rt. cas, W. pas, hooping cough ; ḡnúsactac, soft lowing.

## 30° -rac, -lac—of the noises made by animals :—

amastrac, barking—from amastar (suffix really -ac) ; géimreac (also géimneac), lowing ; ḡrágallac, clucking of hens (onomatopoeic) ; siosarac, siotarac (sitreac), neighing ; -artac, in :—sraocharac, sneezing (sraot), uallcharac (uallparac), said of swine (uallparac, growl). Here the suffix is really -ac.



31° -**ḡait**, -**ḡat**, -**uīot** :—

Camastuīot, moral crookedness ; ḡráḡḡait, clucking ; ḡnūsḡait, lowing ; pusuīot, pouting ; feavuīot, whistling.

32° -**sine** :—

ḡáistme, prophecy—from ḡarō, prophet. O.I. fáith-sine.

## 365.—C.—From Adverbs, Prepositions, Pronouns.

1° -**tar** :—

Oirtear, the East. Cf. prep. ar, and adv. toir ; iartar, the West. Cf. prep. iar, and adv. tīar ; uaḡtar, the top ; ioḡtar, the bottom ; ceanntar, district ; neaḡtar, ceaḡtar, one of two or more.

2° -**lann** :—

īarlann, back room, pantry. The word īarleac, tombstone, occurs in the U. song, Éamonn Buirde.

## 366.—D.—From Verbs.

1° -**īō**, the agent, or kindred meaning :—

Āmsīō, Accusative case—from ad-ness-.

2° -**āḡt**, abstract :—

Tuḡtāḡt, proneness to—from the participle tuḡta.

3° -**as**, -**tas** :—

Ṭabartas, gift—from the participle ṭabrtā ; ḡāḡaltas, means—from the participle ḡāḡaltā (ḡāḡāltā).

4° -**nt**- (-**av**) :—

Carā, friend—from cararō, loves. Cf. L. participle in -nt.

5° -**vōs** (Cf. Gk. Perf. Part. Act. in -ωs) :—

Coimdiu, Lord, mod. Coimrde, from \*com-med-vōs. O.I. midiur, I judge.

6° -**s** :—

Bās, death. Orig. v.n. to root ba-. Cf. Gk. ἔβη, Sk. agat, he went.

7° -**am**, the agent :—

luam, pilot—from root \*pleu, to sail.

8° -**neoir** (through v. nouns in -n), -**tōir**, -**avōoir** :—

Scribneoir, writer ; molctōir, adjudicator ; ḡiḡeavōoir, weaver.



## 9° -tro- (I. -τῶν) :—

λότῶν (lotῶn), canal, cauldron, etc. L. lavacrum, bath ; τῶν τῶν (trṓn), gimlet. Gk. τέρε-τρο-ν.

## 10° -aire :—

κλαῖς, thief, rogue, a fish after shedding its spawn. Cf. κλαῖς, I dig. For the deterioration in meaning, cf. E. knave, villain, pagan.

## Formation of Adjectives.

367.—See 84. Besides the suffixes enumerated there, note the following :—

## 1° From Numerals :—

## (a) -to, -eto (I. εἶς) :—

πενταῖς, seiseῖς, 5th, 6th.

## (b) The double suffix -mmo+-eto (I. -ῖς) :—

τριῖς, τετραῖς, 3rd, 4th, etc. In the I.G. period sometimes -mo was used, sometimes to. E.g.—L. decimus, 10th <\*dekm-mo-s. Gk. δέκατος <\*dekm-to-s. The two are combined in the I. suffix -ῖς.

## 2° From Nouns :—

## -ineῖς, -ανῖς :—

τοῖς, willing (τοῖς) ; οἰστέανῖς, legal (οἰστέαν). These suffixes originated from words like ἀμνηῖς, Ἀλβανῖς (from nn-, n- stems) with the suffix -ῖς ; μαρτανῖς, lasting—from μαρτάν, G. μαρτάν.

## 3° From Prepositions :—

## -lo :—

ὑψαῖς, noble (ὅς, above) ; ἰσαῖς, lowly (ἵος, is, below).

## Formation of Verbs.

368.—1° Many verbs are derived from nouns and adjectives, by adding the termination -ῖς, ῖς :—

ἔργον, I work ; ἑλπίς, I improve, etc. When the noun was an n- stem, this n appears before the suffix :—



Διμνήσιμ, I name ; céμνήσιμ, I step, advance. This class affects other verbs, " n " appearing by analogy :—

Críóc-n-uíσιμ, I finish—from críóc (Δ- stem) ; cruít-n-íσιμ, I create, form—from cruít (u- stem) ; críot-n-uíσιμ, I tremble—from crít, G. creatá, shaking, ague.

Further *normal* examples :—

Stánuíσιμ, I make well ; pottsíσιμ, I publish (pottus, clear) ; árouíσιμ, I raise ; ístíσιμ, I lower.

2° Many verbs are compounded with prepositions. These have been dealt with already.

### Críóc.































